

तमसो मा ज्योतिर्गमय

SANTINIKETAN  
VISWA BHARATI  
LIBRARY

271.701

P483

**THE HIBBERT LECTURES.**

**1885.**



*THE HIBBERT LECTURES, 1885.*

---

LECTURES  
ON THE  
INFLUENCE OF THE APOSTLE PAUL  
ON THE  
DEVELOPMENT OF CHRISTIANITY,

DELIVERED IN LONDON AND OXFORD,  
IN APRIL AND MAY, 1885.

BY  
OTTO PFLEIDERER, D.D.  
PROFESSOR OF THEOLOGY IN THE UNIVERSITY OF BERLIN.

TRANSLATED BY J. FREDERICK SMITH.  
*THIRD EDITION.*



WILLIAMS AND NORFATE,  
14, HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN, LONDON;  
20, SOUTH FREDERICK STREET, EDINBURGH;  
AND 7, BROAD STREET, OXFORD.

1897.

[*All Rights reserved.*]



LONDON:  
PRINTED BY C. GREEN AND SON,  
178, STRAND.

# CONTENTS.

---

## LECTURE I.

### THE FIRST CHURCH AND THE CONVERSION OF PAUL.

	PAGE
Opposed views of the theology and influence of Paul. The Messianic belief of the First Church. The conservative attitude of the First Church in relation to Judaism. The significance of Stephen's public appearance. The conversion of Paul according to the Acts and the Pauline Epistles. The psychological explanation of it	1

## LECTURE II.

### THE DOCTRINAL TEACHING OF PAUL.

Its independent origin. His Christology. Atonement through the death of Christ. Justification by Faith. Moral consequences. Flesh and Spirit. Baptism and Lord's Supper. The purpose of the Law. The three ages of human history. The Divine method of salvation	45
--	----

## LECTURE III.

THE CONFLICT OF THE APOSTLE TO THE GENTILES  
WITH JEWISH CHRISTIANS.

PAGE

First conflict at Antioch. The Apostolic Council of Jerusalem. Significance of the Apostolic agreement. The contention between Paul and Peter at Antioch. Consequences of the same. The Judaists of Galatia. The polemical position of the Epistle to the Galatians. The conflict with the Corinthian opponents. The irenical character of the Epistle to the Romans . . . 97

## LECTURE IV.

THE RECONCILIATION OF PAULINISM AND  
JEWISH CHRISTIANITY.

The relation of Paul to his Roman opponents according to the Epistle to the Philippians. The Book of Revelation: its origin, legal anti-Paulinism, idealistic Christology, relation to Heathen Christians. The Epistle of James. The Paulinism of the Gospel of Mark. The Judaism of the Gospel of Matthew. The conciliatory Paulinism of the Gospel of Luke . . . 149

## LECTURE V.

## PAULINISM AND GNOSTICISM.

Gnostic element in Paul's allegorical interpretation of Scripture. The Alexandrine Gnosis of the Epistle to the Hebrews and the Epistle of Barnabas. The Pauline Gnosis of the Epistles to the Colossians and Ephesians. The hyper-Pauline Gnosis of Marcion and the anti-Pauline Gnosis of the pseudo-Clementine writings . . . 199

## LECTURE VI.

## PAULINISM AND THE CHURCH.

	PAGE
The transformation of Paulinism into Catholicism according to the first Epistle of Clement and the Pastoral and Ignatian Epistles. The Romanized Paulinism of Augustine. Ambiguity of the Augustinian doctrine of Predestination. The anti-Catholic application of it by Wiclif and Huss. Revival of the Pauline spirit in Luther. His relation to Paul and Augustine. Dogma and heresy in Protestantism. The historical criticism of Morgan, Semler, Baur.—The eternal and the perishable elements of Paulinism . . . . .	245

## CORRECTIONS.

Page 16, line 1, read "*by* Paul" for "*to* Paul."

Page 172, line 7, read "*complete* parallel" for "*direct* parallel."



LECTURE I

THE FIRST CHURCH AND THE CONVERSION  
OF PAUL.



## LECTURE I.

# THE FIRST CHURCH AND THE CONVERSION OF PAUL.

---

BEFORE I enter upon the subject of these Lectures, allow me to present to the Trustees of this Foundation my sincere and hearty thanks for the gratification which their invitation to undertake the delivery of the Hibbert Lectures for this year gave me. It was with mixed feelings, it is true, that I accepted the invitation. For much as I felt the honour and dignity put upon me by the request to continue the series of Lectures which have been delivered by such distinguished and famous men as the previous Hibbert Lecturers, the doubt weighed very heavily upon my mind whether I should be able to justify your confidence and to perform satisfactorily the task proposed to me. If it is no easy



thing to deal adequately in a few hours with such a comprehensive and difficult subject as the significance of Paulinism in the development of Christianity confessedly is, in my case the difficulty is increased by the fact that I am not fully master of your language. Though some twenty-two years ago I spent a summer, which I can never forget, in your country, and persuaded myself at the time that at all events I understood English, such a period is long enough to let one forget how to handle a foreign language readily. If, therefore, I have nevertheless ventured to accept your invitation, it has been in the confident hope that you will kindly take into account the special difficulties of the foreigner addressing you, and that you will treat the defects of his language and delivery with forbearance. I was induced, in spite of all these doubts, to hazard the undertaking and meet the wishes of the Trustees, not only by the pleasant prospect of personally meeting old and new friends, but especially by the attraction which the subject itself has for me. For the historical significance of the Apostle Paul, his personality and doctrine, his

relation to Jesus and the First Church, no less than his influence on the development of Christianity in early and recent times, has always been to me one of the most interesting and important subjects of religious inquiry. It seems to me thus important from both doctrinal and practical points of view. For we have in it especially the key to an understanding of the origin and development of our religion; and a closer acquaintance with Paulinism—with its eternal religious truths and its perishable forms—might prove an excellent help towards the settlement of our religious troubles and the promotion of sound religious progress. On that account the treatment of this subject certainly falls within the range of the design of the Hibbert Trust, and I shall consider myself fortunate if I should succeed in contributing in a small degree by my Lectures to the furtherance of that truly grand and noble design.

Considering the importance of Paulinism in relation to Christianity, we might have expected that it would have long ago been thoroughly understood and elucidated by theologians, and that at all events

complete agreement would have been arrived at with regard to all chief points. But a glance anywhere into the literature of the subject shows how little this is the case at present. We might almost say that there is hardly another subject within the whole range of ecclesiastical history with regard to which opinions and conclusions so widely differ as is the case with Paulinism. This may be explained in part by the special difficulties involved in the subject itself, and in part by the fact that an unprejudiced historical examination of Paulinism is of recent date, and has still to contend at every step with the prepossessions of dogmatic sympathies or antipathies. As long as the Bible was read under the suppositions involved in the orthodox doctrine of inspiration, and nothing might be found in the New Testament but the doctrinal system of a certain theology, an eye for the peculiarities of the teaching of Paul was altogether wanting: Paul was classed together with the other biblical authors under the ingenuous supposition that they all taught always the same dogmatic truths, save that perhaps one did this somewhat more plainly and at greater length

than the others. The Rationalism of the end of the latter and beginning of the present century, too, although it had emancipated itself from the fetters of the orthodox theory of inspiration, possessed too little historical perception to be able to appreciate even approximately the significance of Paul. It took offence at the dogmatical difficulties of the Pauline theology, and endeavoured more or less arbitrarily to soften them down, explain them away, or adjust them, and thereby of course deprived itself of the possibility of understanding the ideas of Paul in their own original significance and in accordance with their historical and psychological conditions. It was the strictly historical examination of primitive Christianity, as it originated with the great Tübingen theologian, Christian Ferdinand Baur, which first gave the key to an understanding of the characteristic peculiarities and the historical significance of the Apostle Paul. For it was that examination which, by an accurate critical sifting of the documents, proved how erroneous was the ancient tradition of the harmonious agreement of all the Apostles; how profound, on the contrary, was

the antagonism between Paul and the first Apostles, how animated the contention of the parties, how protracted and laborious the process of their union in the Church.

By this means the way had undoubtedly been prepared for a proper appreciation of the historical significance of the Apostle Paul. But as so often happens in the course of human inquiry that newly-obtained knowledge is in the first instance exaggerated and unduly pressed, thereby giving rise to new errors, so was it in this instance. Even in the case of the earlier theologians of the so-called Tübingen School there was perceptible a certain inclination, in dwelling on the theological originality of the Apostle Paul, to put into the back-ground his religious dependence on Jesus in such a way that it might seem as if Christianity had proceeded really not from Jesus but from Paul. That was, indeed, never Baur's opinion: but in his pupil Schweigler's account of primitive Christianity an inference of this kind might undoubtedly seem to be implied. The inference has been subsequently made by others, and most distinctly by the philosopher Eduard von

Hartmann in his work on the *Entwicklung des religiösen Bewusstseins der Menschheit*.<sup>1</sup> According to von Hartmann, Paul, as "the inventor of Heathen Christianity and the dogma of Salvation," is alone entitled to be considered the author of the Christian Religion of Salvation, while, on the other hand, Jewish Christianity was in itself only "an eschatological dream" (*Schwärmerei*), like so many others, which would simply have figured amongst the curiosities of history if the credited facts about the death and resurrection of Jesus had not become in Paul's case the accidental occasion for basing on them an anti-Jewish universal religion. "If Paul had not invented Heathen Christianity, the idea would never have occurred to later ages that Jewish Christianity was anything else than a religion of Law peculiar to the Jewish nation, containing intensified Messianic expectations, and with a definite reference of those expectations to the person of a prophet who was not acknowledged while he lived and met with a violent death." That reference of the Messianic

---

• <sup>1</sup> Pp. 525 sq.

expectation to the person of a prophet—in other words, *faith in the Messianic dignity of Jesus*—is regarded by von Hartmann as a personal addition to the doctrines of Judaism, which leaves the substantial truths of the religion untouched: neither Jesus, therefore, nor the First Church advanced in religious principle beyond Judaism; the new principle of the universal Religion of Salvation originated with the Apostle Paul. There is some truth in Hartmann's views. It is true that the Messianic movement would not have become the universal religion of Christianity without the work of Paul. But it has been forgotten that the work of Paul presupposes as its indispensable basis the personal history of Jesus, without which basis it would be as a castle in the clouds. The whole subject-matter of the Epistles of Paul would be to us unintelligible, the very fact of his change from a Pharisee into an Apostle incomprehensible, and the success of his missionary labours inexplicable, were we to throw aside the one explanatory key which Paul himself presents to us in the constantly recurring declaration: "We preach not ourselves but Jesus Christ as the

Lord," and "I determined to know nothing among you save *Jesus Christ the crucified one*;" again, "Let a man account of us as servants of Christ and stewards of the mysteries of God;" or finally, "Other foundation can no man lay than that which is laid, which is *Jesus Christ*."<sup>1</sup> Simply to ignore these personal declarations of the Apostle would be in itself an unwarrantably arbitrary procedure, and is in the end rendered wholly impossible, as we shall see, by the fact that it is only by means of them that the history of Paul becomes intelligible. "The servant is not above his Lord"—we must accept that, and with it we reject at the commencement every attempt to exaggerate Paul's claims at the cost of Jesus as a mistake, the origin of which in von Hartmann's case may undoubtedly be discovered in the confusion of the Christian religion with Christian theology, a confusion which is always natural to the dominant intellectual bent of the philosopher. Christian theology, it is true, dates from Paul, but the Christian religion from Jesus, both his Lord and ours.

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iv. 6; 1 Cor. iv. 1, iii. 11, ii. 2.



Yet this very fact that Paul was the originator of Christian *theology*—of the full exposition and development in a didactic and doctrinal form of the Christian consciousness—has, again, given rise to an estimate of the Apostle's influence, the opposite of that just discussed. From several quarters Paul is charged with having disfigured the simple "Christianity of Christ" by his dogmatic speculations. While the gospel of Jesus, it is said—those beautiful ethical truths of the Sermon on the Mount, for instance—is plain and attractive to everybody, Paul, with his doctrine of Christ's person and atonement, has, on the contrary, introduced into Christianity that element of the supernatural, with much that is above and contrary to reason, which imposes on the reason a heavier cross than all the works of the Law ever were. Instead of bringing liberty, it is complained, there is thus due to him with his dogmas a new and the worst bondage of the human mind. But this estimate is even, if possible, less historical and more shallow in its depreciation of Paul than the former was in its exaggeration of his importance. It is undoubtedly true that the Chris-

tian spirit which was still in Jesus the direct life of prophetic genius, had in Paul been already cast in the technical forms of doctrine and dogma. It is true also that, in the construction of the Pauline doctrinal system, various elements of the thought of the time were employed, and elements which cannot all lay claim to validity for all time, and in which the specific idea of Christianity has not yet found its pure expression. But are we on that account justified in concluding that those dogmatic forms were altogether unnecessary, and that without them Christianity could have become the religion of the world, and an established ecclesiastical institution, or could have survived amidst the commotions of time? Is it conceivable that the ideal spirit of the gospel of Jesus would ever have succeeded in emancipating itself from massive Judean particularism, which even in the First Church presented such stout resistance to it, unless Paul, the former Pharisee and Scribe, had risen above the Law through the Law, and had got the victory over Judaism by the aid of its own weapons, which he took from the armqury of Rabbinism itself? How

can we imagine that the crucified Messiah of the Jews could have made his triumphant march through the Greek and Roman world, if he had not put on, in Paul's proclamation of him, the luminous form of the celestial Son of God, in which also he could be readily received by the religious and philosophical consciousness of the Heathen world? If we must deny the possibility of that, we have obviously no right to censure the Apostle for accomplishing his divinely great task with the aid of the human means the time supplied. Does he not himself say, "We have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the exceeding greatness of the power may be of God and not from us"?<sup>1</sup> He thereby justifies us in distinguishing in his teaching between the precious treasure, which consists of the divine and saving power of the gospel, and the earthen vessel—that is, his dogmatic forms of teaching, containing the treasure. In fact, it is just here that the real problem of a scientific examination of Paulinism presents itself. That problem is especially to show how Paul, as

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iv. 7.

more powerfully affected by the spirit of Jesus than any one else, sought on his part, by means of the conceptions of his age, to apprehend and comprehend that spirit, how he brought the conceptions of Pharisaism especially into the service of the new truth, and thereby subjected them to a transformation, the result of which was the new and magnificent religious system of the founder of Christian theology.

As in mountainous regions the real height of the loftiest summits is not perceptible close at hand, but can be observed only by the more distant spectator, so in human history it is of very common occurrence that the full significance of the principal personages is much less clearly perceived in their immediate neighbourhood than at a greater distance: it is to those further removed only that the full characteristic image of such personages is presented plainly, while to those closer at hand the larger total impression is often lost sight of behind the small impressions of every-day intercourse. Just this occurred also in the relation of Jesus to the first Apostles and to Paul. Paradoxical as it may seem

that to Paul, who had never listened to the words of Jesus, the inmost *spirit* of Jesus should have been more purely and profoundly apprehended than by the original disciples, such a thing is not incomprehensible. The nature of that spirit had been revealed to him from the very first in the concentrated light of the focus of the great act of his life, in the light of his death on the cross; and from that point of view he perceived in him the end of the ancient religion of the letter which killeth and the beginning of the new religion of the life-giving spirit of adoption and love. Thus Paul perceived more profoundly and brought out more distinctly than the other disciples what was original in Jesus, the divine genius of his personality, wherein precisely lay his vocation to be the Saviour of the world.

Undoubtedly the other disciples had, under the impression produced by their daily intercourse with Jesus, been so powerfully affected by him, that their faith in him and his divine mission was strong enough even to survive and to overcome that which was so paradoxical to them in the course of his history. Inasmuch as the gospel of the kingdom of

God, which had given them such deep satisfaction, could not be a delusion, the Man of God, who was destined to bring that kingdom to his people, could not have gone away for ever, but must be given to them again that he might triumphantly finish his work. This postulate of their faith, this hope of their love, which was stronger than death, became to them the certainty of sight in the experiences of the first Easter ; for the miraculous Christophanies, which were shared at times by individuals and at times by many at once in the exalted moments of their common religious exercises, were regarded by them as the prelude and pledge of the near return of their Lord for the permanent establishment of his kingdom. From that time forth their hope and longing were directed to that return ; their faith in the Messianic dignity of Jesus reached its climax in the expectation of his immediate second coming. But since elsewhere in the Jewish nation of that time a belief in the speedy coming of the Messiah prevailed, the faith of the earliest Church of the disciples of Jesus differed, when strictly looked at, from that of the rest of the Jews, simply in this, that the former

hoped to behold again in the Messiah, whose coming all expected, the crucified Jesus, whom the latter abhorred as a criminal. It is true this *one* point of difference concealed within it a profound chasm, which required only to be realized and thought out in its consequences, to conduct to a complete separation between the Church of the disciples of Jesus and Judaism. But this is just what did not take place within the primitive Church. On the contrary, in its thought and feeling, that point of difference was outweighed by what it possessed in common with Judaism; and that common possession was not merely the general dogmatic axioms, but particularly the view of the Messianic kingdom as the terrestrial consummation of the national Judean theocracy on the basis of the perpetuated Mosaic Law.

In the view of impartial historical inquiry, no doubt exists as to the point, that the earliest Christians were still very far from conceiving the kingdom of Christ as a spiritual kingdom of truth and godliness, or even of celestial blessedness. *We* may be tempted to interpret some of the descriptions of the kingdom of Christ found in the New Testament

as mere symbols of spiritual truths, but we have no right whatever to ascribe this interpretation to the earliest Christians, as if they in their time had intended such ideas of the Messianic kingdom to be understood as merely symbolical representations and not quite seriously in their literal sense. This is the case when in the Gospels the expectation is presented in the form of a promise of Jesus that in the Messianic kingdom the Apostles will sit on twelve thrones and judge the twelve tribes of Israel; that they will receive again, as a reward for their present sacrifices, all that they have lost, including lands and houses, a hundred-fold; that they will recline at table with patriarchs and drink of the fruit of the vine.<sup>1</sup> It is the case also when the Apocalypse describes the new Jerusalem as a royal city, glistening with gold and jewels, coming down from heaven to the earth, and sees the names of the twelve Apostles written on its foundation-stones; or when disciples of the Apostles, of the second century, such as Papias, give descriptions, with genuine

---

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xix. 28, 29, viii. 11, xxvi. 29.



Oriental imagination, of the gigantic vines of the kingdom of God.

With regard to the national Jewish character of the kingdom of the Messiah, too, the conception of the earliest Christians accorded substantially with that of the rest of the Jewish nation. It is the kingdom of Israel as to the restoration of which, according to the Acts, the Apostles interrogate the Lord at his ascension; to the children of the prophets, and of the covenant of the fathers of Israel, the kingdom is assigned, as Peter says;<sup>1</sup> and, according to the Apocalypse, the number of the tribes of Israel determines the measure of the new Jerusalem. Though individual conversions of Heathen might occur, they could not really affect the essentially Jewish character of the Messianic community, such conversions having been, in fact, anticipated by the prophets as taking place in the Messianic age. The First Church was far from thinking of the conversion of the masses of the Heathen, or of a regularly constituted mission to them. In fact, the return of

---

<sup>1</sup> Acts i. 6, iii. 25.

the Lord was believed to be so near, that there would not be sufficient time to proclaim the gospel message throughout the cities of Israel even.<sup>1</sup> Moreover, Jesus was said to have expressly forbidden his disciples to extend their missionary labours beyond Israel: "Go ye not into the way of the Gentiles nor into a city of the Samaritans, but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel."<sup>2</sup> It may, it is true, be conjectured that this utterance did not in its present definite form originate before the time when, in consequence of the appearance of Paul on the scene, the question of the mission to the Heathen had become a subject of animated controversy in the First Church; but it could not well have been quoted as a saying of Jesus if opposite utterances, such as the command to preach to the Heathen, Matt. xxviii. 19, had been remembered. Whatever may be the exact truth with regard to these and similar utterances of Jesus, in any case, according to the concurrent tradition of the Gospels, it is certain that Jesus himself confined

---

<sup>1</sup> Matt. x. 23.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. x. 5.

his Messianic labours to Israel alone, and did not contemplate their extension to the Heathen world. So far the First Church could appeal to the example of Jesus, whilst the Pauline universalism was involved as the corollary and outcome of the spirit of Jesus, as it is expressed in the saying, that God causes His sun to shine on the just and the unjust.

As the First Church could not conceive the Messianic kingdom otherwise than within the framework of the national Jewish theocracy, the case was the same with regard to the perpetual validity of the Mosaic Law. The first Christians lived and moved completely within the prescribed forms of Jewish piety, frequented the Temple, observed the hours of prayer, the fasts, the festivals, the laws regarding food, the customary vows, with a conscientiousness which placed their loyalty to the Law, even in the eyes of the Jewish people, beyond all doubt, and enabled them to appear really as "zealots for the Law," that is, as Jews of the strictest party.<sup>1</sup> Though now and again individuals, like Peter in

---

<sup>1</sup> Acts ii. 46, 47, v. 13, xxi. 20.

the case of Cornelius, and subsequently in Antioch, might on an occasion rise superior to the letter of the Law, and in this practical exhibition of liberal feeling betray some effects of the previous freer spirit of Jesus, that was far from a conscious emancipation on principle from the Law. Of such an emancipation no mention could be made in the First Church, for the simple reason that the question as to the permanent validity of the Law had evidently not come within the horizon of that Church prior to the missionary labours of Paul. The Church supposed as a simple matter of course that the Messianic community which looked for the speedy fulfilment of the promises made to the Fathers, would necessarily be based on the foundation of the Law of God given to the Fathers; no one in the First Church had conceived the possibility of a Messianic community apart from this basis of the Jewish Law. But when subsequently, in consequence of the Pauline mission, the question was proposed practically, whether Heathen believers might be regarded as Christian brethren without first becoming Jews, through the energetic action

of Paul and the valuable assistance of Peter, a decision in favour of the dispensation of Heathen Christians from the Law was successfully adopted, but in the case of Jewish Christians it was determined that, just as before, the obligatory character of the Law should remain intact. Nor did the Jewish-Christian Church subsequently ever get beyond this boundary-line; on the contrary, it afterwards sought to retract the concession of freedom in favour of the Heathen. All the long and violent conflicts which Paul had subsequently to wage with Jewish Christianity in connection with the question of the Law, would be unintelligible on the supposition that the First Church was from the commencement of the same way of thinking as Paul with regard to the dispensation of Christians from the Law; they constitute therefore an irrefragable proof that the First Church considered itself perpetually subject to the Jewish Law.

We shall, moreover, find this Judaic conservatism of the earliest Christians the more intelligible and excusable if we recollect that in this respect also they simply held by the example of Jesus, who with

all the inward freedom of his heart and soul in relation to matters of the Law, at the same time submitted himself in his outward actions to all the existing customs and institutions of his nation. When the Master had said, that he had come not to destroy but to fulfil, how could the disciples think of destroying? It is true that the first disciples of Jesus, perhaps even Jesus himself, had not clearly perceived that the fulfilment of the Divine will, when conceived with such profound spirituality as it was by Jesus—that is, in the sense of a divine and absolute goodness and purity of heart—of itself involves the invalidating of the unspiritual ritual and ceremonial Law, and therefore in its consequences the abrogation of it in the course of time. They had probably learnt, in their intercourse with Jesus, that mercy is more than sacrifices and keeping the Sabbath, purity of heart more than washing of hands and straining out gnats; but they had so accustomed themselves to regard ethical virtues as secondary to ceremonial observances and as their harmonious completion, that they had no feeling for the profound antagonism of principle existing between

them. The antithesis between Law and Gospel, which the Pharisee Paul afterwards so pointedly recognized that from the beginning there was for him simply the alternative, either a Christian or a Jew, had never been so distinctly perceived by the earlier Apostles as to put before them the alternative of loyalty to the Law or faith in Christ. That, therefore, which seemed to be, and in a certain respect really was, the advantage of the earlier Apostles over Paul—their regular education by means of personal intercourse with Jesus, which also gradually reconciled the differences between the old and the new principle—was the very thing that, to a certain extent, proved their disadvantage, in as far as it veiled from their view the new and anti-Judaic principle in the work of Jesus. Inasmuch as the antagonism between the old and the new religion had never been quite clearly perceived by them during the life of Jesus, his death could not afterwards open their eyes to it. Their faith endeavoured to get over the offence of the cross as quickly as possible, endeavoured to minimize, to excuse, to put another construction on

this scandal to a Jewish mind; and precisely this kept them from entering so unreservedly into the significance of that offensive fact as to be able to fully realize the momentous importance of its consequences. They looked upon the death of Jesus as the martyrdom of the Righteous One, of which human ignorance had been the sinful cause, and which God had permitted, and to which certainly, according to the words of the prophet (Isaiah liii.) concerning the suffering Servant of God, a salutary virtue for the forgiveness of sins was to be ascribed, as the Jewish theologians generally maintained with regard to all the sufferings of a righteous man. But the view of the Apostle Paul—that Christ's death, in which the Holy One succumbed to the curse of the Law, signified the final abrogation of the Law of the letter—was wholly unknown to the First Church. In its view, the death of the Messiah was only a further supplementary means of salvation in addition to the ancient means and works of the Law, while for Paul it was the new means of salvation *in the place of* the entire ancient legal system. In the view of the first Christians, Jesus was, and remained,



*notwithstanding* his death on the cross, the Messiah of the Jews; but in Paul's view he became the Saviour of the world *by virtue of* that ignominious death.

As long as the Apostolic Church exhibited this conservative attitude towards the Jewish Law, no serious conflicts between it and the Jewish authorities could arise. Though its proclamation of the resurrection and Messiahship of the crucified Jesus might be obnoxious to the heads of the nation, there was no ground for an energetic employment of force against it, as the disciples of Jesus displayed in their conduct such a blameless loyalty to the Law that they enjoyed amongst the people the reputation of exemplary piety. These devout believers in their Messiah, it was at first thought in the circles of the Pharisees, might be let alone as harmless enthusiasts, inasmuch as they were really in other respects as good Jews as could be. The well-known counsel of Gamaliel was in fact the most sagacious that could, from the Jewish standpoint, be given with regard to the Messianic movement. If this peaceable relation had been kept up, without

doubt the Messianic movement would never have grown beyond the limits of a Jewish sect, and as such would have expired, at all events, with the destruction of Jerusalem; Christ would then have died in vain, since his spirit and life-work would have been extinguished in the restrictions of Judaism. For the future of Christianity it was therefore of decisive moment that the bolder action of the Hellenist Stephen interrupted the tranquil life of the infant Church in Jerusalem, and set rolling the stone which from that time forth no human power could stop.

It was probably no accident that this new impetus originated with a Hellenist and not a Hebrew. The Hellenistic Jews had, in consequence of their contact with Heathen culture, in various other respects obtained greater freedom of view, and adhered less tenaciously than the Jews of Palestine to the Temple services and other ceremonial observances, above which they ranked the ethical portions of the Law. In fact, Philo even found it necessary to oppose rationalistic Jews of this description belonging to the Diaspora, who supposed it allow-

able to let go the letter of the Law in their attention to its spiritual meaning. If, therefore, an Hellenist with these more liberal views had become acquainted with Jesus in his last days in Jerusalem, for instance, and had witnessed his rejection by the hierarchy, how easily might it then have happened that the powerful denunciations uttered by Jesus against the empty formality of the official theologians should touch a responsive chord in his heart, and stir thoughts in which the mind of Jesus would find truer expression than in the conservative Jewish Christianity of the Hebrew early Church! Whatever may be the exact literal fact with regard to the accusation raised against both Stephen and Jesus of having blasphemed the Temple, the very circumstance that tradition has preserved both accusations in nearly the same forms, betrays unmistakable traces of the close connection which existed between the reformatory labours of Jesus and the action of Stephen. It is not without significance, therefore, that the Church placed the festival of the protomartyr Stephen immediately after the birthday of Jesus, for it was really he who saved the life-

work of Jesus from stagnation in Jewish traditionalism, inasmuch as he was the first to bring out the profound difference between the crucified Son of Man and legal Judaism, becoming thereby the historical link between Jesus and Paul.

On the occasion of the tumultuous trial in which the first martyr of the infant Church fell a sacrifice, the Pharisee and Scribe, Paul of Tarsus, took a prominent part as an eager opponent of the Christians. He was the witness at whose feet the executioners of Stephen laid their garments; he was then the confidential ally of the Sanhedrin, who was sent to Damascus with large discretionary powers for the further persecution of the fugitives. But the man that had set out for the persecution of the Christians arrived in Damascus a convert. What was it which effected this sudden change in the fanatical Pharisee and zealot of the Law? There are, as we know, in the Acts of the Apostles three separate accounts<sup>1</sup> of the conversion of Paul, between which there is so much difference that none of them can be regarded

---

<sup>1</sup> Acts ix. xxiv. and xxvi.

as an accurate historical description; yet they appear to possess as their common nucleus the fact that his conversion was the effect of a sudden event of an extraordinary character, which was attended by a violent mental and physical convulsion of the whole man, during which he believed he saw and heard a revelation of the Messiah Jesus. And therewith the direct declarations of Paul himself in his Epistles are in agreement, the decisive experience appearing, according to them, likewise to have consisted of a Christophany. When he asks, 1 Cor.<sup>6</sup> ix. 1, for instance, "Have not I seen the Lord Jesus Christ?" according to the context the words can only refer to a sight of Christ of such a nature as established the apostolic dignity of Paul, and must accordingly have been connected with his call to be an Apostle at his conversion. And when, after recounting the previous appearances of Christ, 1 Cor. xv. 9, he continues, "Last of all he appeared to me also as to an untimely birth, for I am the least of the Apostles, who am not worthy to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the Church; but through the grace of God I am what I am," it is clear that in this pas-

sage also he traces his call to the Apostleship to an appearing of Christ, which he ranks, as essentially similar, with the earlier appearances of the risen Lord. It is accordingly beyond doubt that Paul was fully convinced of the objective reality of the appearance of Christ with which he was favoured; at the same time, however, he seems elsewhere to intimate that it was not an ordinary seeing and hearing with the physical senses, but an inward experience within his soul. For he says, with evident reference to his conversion, Gal. i. 16, "It pleased God to reveal his Son *in me*, that I might preach him among the Heathen;" and 2 Cor. iv. 6, "God shined *in our hearts* for the illumination of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ." But in that case we shall be justified in placing the event on the road to Damascus in the same category with those other "visions and revelations" of which Paul elsewhere often speaks<sup>1</sup>—that is, it is allowable to place that decisive experience, notwithstanding its extraordinary character, in the category of visions,

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. xii. 1 sq.; Gal. ii. 2; comp. Acts xvi. 9, xxvii. 23.

which are at all events to a certain degree to be explained from the mental condition of the subject.<sup>1</sup> Moreover, those who look upon the conversion of Paul as a miracle in the strictest sense of the word, are unable, nevertheless, to dispense altogether with a psychological preparation for it, inasmuch as otherwise the conversion would have to be regarded as a direct and immediate, that is magical, act of God, in which the soul of Paul would have succumbed to an alien force, which would be a view wholly opposed to the genius of Christianity, and in direct contradiction to the Apostle's own definition of faith as an act of moral obedience.

We possess in the words which the Acts of the Apostles (xxvi. 14) represents Paul as hearing from the lips of Jesus, "It is hard for thee to kick against the goad," a hint for the psychological explanation

---

<sup>1</sup> It is true that this would not be possible according to the account of the Acts, because in it the marvellous appearance is witnessed not by Paul alone, but also by his attendants. But it appears plainly merely from the discrepancies between the various accounts of the Acts, that that circumstance cannot be regarded as historical, but must be ascribed to the influence of embellishing tradition.

of the change. Before his conversion, accordingly, Paul had felt a goad in his soul, against which he vainly sought to kick. In what else can it have consisted than in the painful doubt as to the lawfulness of his persecution of the Christians—in the doubt, therefore, whether the truth was really on his side, and not rather, after all, on that of the persecuted disciples of Christ? But how was it possible that a doubt like this should arise in the soul of the fanatical Pharisee? The occasion for this had been just then supplied by his participation in the persecution of the Christians. The very sight of the joyful martyrs' courage with which the Christians met suffering and death for the name of their crucified Lord, necessarily affected powerfully the tender soul of Paul, and pressed upon him the question, whether men who could die so gladly for their faith could really be blasphemers; whether a faith which produced such heroism could be a delusion. But we must consider, in addition, that on such occasions Paul could not avoid hearing the defence made by the Christians, and therefore being made acquainted with the proofs of the truth of their



faith and taking them into consideration. When, in reply to their apologies, he maintained that he who had been rejected by his own nation could not possibly be the Messiah of that nation, they answered him that it was written in the Scriptures themselves, "The stone which the builders had rejected was destined to become the corner-stone." If he urged further, "Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree," the crucified Jesus died under the curse of God, they met him with the passage of Isaiah in which there is said of the Servant of God, "Surely he hath borne our sicknesses and took upon himself our pains, was wounded for our transgressions and smitten for our sins; the punishment was laid on him that we might have peace, and by his wounds we are healed." And that this significance of the death of Jesus as a vicarious means of propitiation did not fail to produce an impression on the Pharisee Paul, is in the highest degree probable, inasmuch as it certainly fell in with the prevailing view of the theology of the Pharisees, in which the unmerited sufferings of the righteous generally were regarded as an atonement for the sins of their families and

their nation. This theory, it is true, had not been in the theology of the Pharisees applied to the Messiah, because the feature of bearing and suffering generally did not find a place in their ideal of the Messiah. But after the Christians had once given to the passage of Isaiah the Messianic interpretation, no valid objection could be brought against it from the Pharisaic standpoint. Indeed, we may go further and say, that when once the Pharisee considered and thought out in its consequences, in the first instance only as a hypothesis, the idea of the vicarious propitiatory suffering of the Messiah, from that point of view the solution of a difficulty might offer itself under which his faith in other respects painfully suffered. That is, the Pharisees expected the coming of the Messiah in the immediate future for the deliverance of his people, while all the time it was no less one of their established beliefs that the days of the Messiah would be beheld only by a righteous nation. Where, then, was this righteous nation, completely answering to the Divine will? Had, then, all the convulsive efforts of the Pharisees to lead the nation to right-

eousness produced any effect at all? Did they not condemn themselves in their bitter contempt of the masses who knew nothing of the Law? Indeed, was not the conscientious Pharisee obliged to confess that he had never been able in his own ease even to attain the ideal of righteousness to which he had aspired—that all his zeal for righteousness had failed to conquer, but had rather provoked and increased, the resistance of his sinful desires? We may safely infer from Paul's subsequent description of the inward conflict in man,<sup>1</sup> that he himself as a Pharisee had really passed through and painfully suffered under such experiences. The question might therefore the more naturally force itself upon him and occupy his mind, whether, inasmuch as the righteousness of the Messianic kingdom cannot be attained by our own efforts, it was not meant to be accomplished by the Messiah himself. Was it not therefore meant to be not so much the condition of his coming as rather the effect and object of it? Was not, perhaps, precisely the undeserved suffering

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. vii. 12 sq.

of such a righteous servant of God as Jesus must have been, according to the delineations of his disciples, intended to be the divinely ordered means of rendering sinners righteous before God?

The more Paul considered such thoughts as these, the less could he help perceiving that the faith of the Christians in the Messianic dignity of the crucified Jesus was after all not so foolish and wicked as he had at first supposed; that, on the contrary, the possibility of the truth of that faith could be denied off-hand least of all from the standpoint of beliefs held by the Pharisees. But if he had only once been compelled to allow this possibility, the justice of his persecution of the Christian Church had been rendered doubtful. How heavily must this doubt weigh upon the tender conscience of Paul! If previously, in the excitement and commotion of action in Jerusalem, he succeeded in getting rid of his doubts, now on the lonely road to Damascus they would the more irresistibly assail him, and penetrate as goads his soul. How will he have prayed for a solution of the enigma, for a satisfaction of his doubt! That

the crucified Jesus might be the Messiah was shown by the Scriptures; but by what sign should Paul know that he *really* was the Messiah? The faith of the disciples was based on the fact that they had seen Jesus as the risen Lord who had been raised to God's right hand; and Paul could perceive by the glorified countenance of the dying Stephen how sacred that conviction was to them. Could this conviction be a lie or a delusion? But if it was true, *then*—such must have been Paul's inference—God Himself had taken the side of the Crucified One and by an unparalleled miracle declared him to be the Messiah, not merely in the Jewish sense of the Son of David, but in the much higher sense of the celestial Son of God; *then* the death of Jesus was consequently the undeserved death of the Son of God for the propitiation of our sins; *then* faith in him was the divinely ordained means of justification; *then* satisfaction was provided for the hitherto hopeless longing of his heart for peace with God. Thus in this crucial moment for the Pharisee Paul, everything, life or death, salvation or ruin, depended on the one question, whether the crucified

Jesus had been in reality exalted by God to be the celestial Messiah.

Whilst his contending thoughts were being agitated concerning this crucial point, the image of the crucified Jesus, as Stephen had seen it at his death, presented itself with increasing distinctness prominently before Paul's inward vision. Though that image might be very unlike the Pharisaic ideal of the Messiah, it had, nevertheless, unmistakable points of kinship with ideal creations of the Jewish and Hellenistic speculation, which were well known to the theologian Paul. In Jewish Apocalyptic writings, ever since Daniel, a Son of Man had been spoken of, who would come to judge the world in the clouds of heaven.<sup>1</sup> Jewish and Hellenistic theology spoke of an archetypal Man in heaven, as the copy of whom Adam had been created;<sup>2</sup> it spoke also of a divine Wisdom and a divine Word, which had been independent organs

---

<sup>1</sup> Dan. vii. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Phil. *Leg. Allegor.* I. 12 (Mang. I. p. 49); *De Mundi Opif.* 46 (Mang. I. p. 32).

and mediators of God in the creation and government of the world, in sacred history especially the organs of revelation.<sup>1</sup> Conceptions of this kind, the relation of which to each other and to the Messianic idea was still very vague and variable; might on that very account be the more easily connected in the mind of Paul with the image of the risen Jesus, which agitated his soul in the midst of its doubts. Thus everything combined to procure an increasingly definite form and constantly deeper hold for that image in the soul of the persecuting Pharisee. Whilst he was still advancing on the road to persecute Jesus in his disciples, Jesus had so profoundly and irresistibly, in the form in which he lived in the minds of his disciples, taken possession of the soul of Paul, that all the resistance of the Pharisee was of no avail.

Do we, therefore, still need a miracle to explain the decisive event, that sight of the celestial Christ, which assisted in bringing Paul's faith into full and

---

<sup>1</sup> Prov. viii. 22 sq.; Sirach xxiv.; Baruch iii.; Enoch xlii. 2; Wisdom of Sol. vii. 22 sq.; Philo, *passim*.

conscious existence? It appears to me that we are in a position to perceive fully the mental condition and circumstances from which the *vision* of Paul can be psychologically explained: an excitable, nervous temperament, a soul which had been violently agitated and torn by the most terrible doubts; a most vivid phantasy, occupied with the awful scenes of persecution on the one hand, and on the other by the ideal image of the celestial Christ; in addition, the nearness of Damascus with the urgency of a decision, the lonely stillness, the scorching and blinding heat of the desert—in fact, everything combined to produce one of those ecstatic states in which the soul believes that it sees those images and conceptions which profoundly agitate it, as if they were phenomena proceeding from the outward world. However, whether we are satisfied with this psychologically explained vision, or prefer to regard an objective Christophany in addition necessary to explain the conversion of Paul, it remains in either case certain that it was God who in the soul of Paul caused a light to shine to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of



Jesus Christ.<sup>1</sup> How, with this light, a new world of faith and life arose upon the Apostle, we shall have to see in our next Lecture.

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iv, 6.

**LECTURE II.**

**THE DOCTRINAL TEACHING OF PAUL.**



## LECTURE II.

### THE DOCTRINAL TEACHING OF PAUL.

---

THE theology of the Apostle Paul is the development, on the basis of the previous beliefs of his Jewish theology, of that faith in Christ which became a certainty to him at his conversion. Jewish theology supplied the material in which his Christian teaching found its expression. But that material underwent a thorough-going reconstruction under the influence of the new spirit which pervaded it; it became the receptacle for the new energies of religious life which the Apostle received with his faith in Christ. The theology of Paul did not originate in his head, was not the product of cold ratiocination, but had its source in the heart, in the living experience of that power of God to

effect salvation which the Gospel brings with it. But Paul's was a richly-endowed nature, in which the necessity of distinctness of knowledge and the power of consecutive thought were not less strong than the depth and warmth of his emotion. On that account Paul had no rest until he had brought the new conviction which had come to him outside Damascus into intimate relation with his previous convictions, had subordinated all details to this fresh centre, and had thus formed a new system of theological doctrine. Hence arose likewise the two-fold aspect which this theology has always presented to its students: on the one hand, it appears to resemble an ingenious scholastic system, which produces upon us a repulsive impression, the material of its conceptions having been taken from Jewish modes of thought; while, on the other hand, it is evidently the expression of the deepest and strongest religious life, the embodiment of the loftiest moral ideal, and the symbol of those inmost experiences of the heart which constitute the essence of the Christian Religion of Salvation.

Was the crucified Jesus really the risen Christ

and Lord from heaven? This was the question at issue in the conflicts in Paul's soul preparatory to his conversion. As soon as this question had been set at rest by the vision of Christ, the fundamental principle of his gospel was settled in his mind. The very thing that had previously been to him the stone of stumbling and offence, then became the foundation and corner-stone of his new religious system. Thenceforth he determined to know nothing but Jesus Christ as the crucified and risen Lord. These two facts (which in his view become one, in so far as it was precisely by his resurrection that the crucified Jesus was shown to be the Christ and the saving significance of his death on the cross was guaranteed) constituted the Alpha and Omega of his gospel, whilst nothing else—not even the life of Jesus on the earth—was taken into consideration at all. For the very reason that he had become convinced of this cardinal point by an inward process, Paul could say,<sup>1</sup> that he had not received or learnt his gospel

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. i. 12, 15, 16.

from men, but by revelation of Jesus Christ; for when it pleased God to reveal his Son in him, he did not confer with flesh and blood, did not even go up to Jerusalem to the older Apostles, but retired into Arabia, and not until three years afterwards did he have intercourse with Peter, on a visit of fourteen days to Jerusalem. If we may suppose that Paul used this three years' retreat into Arabia after his conversion for the purpose of thinking over, making his own, and shaping the new conviction at which he had arrived, it follows that his gospel had already been fixed in his mind when he sought to make the acquaintance of the older Apostles. The historical information which he may have gathered from Peter on that occasion he passes over with significant silence, which indicates plainly enough of how little moment that information was as regards his line of Christian thought, which had already been settled.

This declaration of the Apostle has been variously called in question, or at all events attempts have been made to qualify it. But we are not at all justified in so doing, since every inspection of the Pauline

Epistles confirms its absolute correctness. The gospel which Paul expounds in this passage is in fact exactly what we should expect from his description of its origin. It is nothing else than "the word of the Cross," that is, the proclamation of the crucified and risen Christ Jesus with the religious and moral inferences involved therein. Isolated references to utterances of Jesus, it is true, occur, which presuppose a certain acquaintance with the gospel tradition. But most of them are of entirely secondary significance; the account of the institution of the Lord's Supper only is of greater importance; but it is just in this case that Paul appears, when we look more closely, not to appeal to a human transmission of historical information, but to a direct revelation of Christ,<sup>1</sup> a view which is in complete accord with the fact that his version of the words used by Jesus on the institution of the rite presents a dogmatic turn which differs from the older gospel tradition, and of which he may very

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xi. 23, Ἐγὼ γὰρ παρέλαβον ἀπὸ τοῦ κυρίου; comp. Gal. i. 12.



well have become convinced by the inward process of religious induction. To this must be added the negative consideration, that just in those cases in which Paul had the most direct and urgent occasion to appeal to utterances of Jesus, or to the example of his earthly life, he never does this: for instance, when he is dealing with the worthlessness of the ceremonial Law for Christians, or with love as the true fulfilling of the Law, or with examples of humility and willing self-sacrifice; in which last case, it is true, Paul refers to Christ,<sup>1</sup> not, however, to the extremely relevant example of his earthly life, but to his incarnation, and accordingly to considerations taken not from history, but from dogmatic speculation. In all this lies a distinct confirmation of what Paul himself testifies regarding the origin of his gospel: that he had not received it by human tradition, but by the revelation of Christ; that is, that it was based, not upon an intimate knowledge of the outward life of Jesus, but upon an inward vision of the spiritual nature of Christ,

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. viii. 9; Phil. ii. 5 sq.

and therefore upon the spontaneous rise of religious intuitions, which remained, however, all along connected with the historical person of Jesus by means of the one fact of the crucifixion. On this very account, that in the faith of Paul all salvation proceeded from this one point of the *death* of Jesus, everything else, including even the earthly *life* of Jesus, might well appear to him as insignificant. "Henceforth," he says (2 Cor. v. 16), "know we no man after the flesh; though we have known Christ after the flesh, henceforth know we him no more; therefore if any man is in Christ, he is a new creature; old things are passed away; behold, they are become new!" Looking upon himself, therefore, as in Christ a new man, on whom a new world of the spirit has arisen, everything which belongs to the old natural sphere of existence loses all religious significance; for this reason he is now also determined "to know nothing of Christ after the flesh," that is, of the earthly appearance and manner of life of Jesus as the Son of David after the flesh, but henceforth he knows Christ only as the Son of God after the spirit, as the Lord who is the Spirit and the Man from

heaven.<sup>1</sup> Undoubtedly this was magnificently daring idealism, and the very thing which was required to liberate Christianity from its Jewish fetters; but with all its exaltation above the external phenomena of history, this ideal conception of Christ is at the same time the true representation of the *spirit* of Jesus when freed from all earthly elements, the mirror of his divine glory, as it was brightly reflected in the pure and noble soul of the Apostle.

If we now examine somewhat more closely this Pauline conception of Christ, we shall find that it corresponds, feature by feature, to what has been just said with regard to its origin. As a light from heaven, Paul had seen Christ near Damascus. According to the Biblical conception, light is everywhere the form in which spirit generally and the spirits manifest themselves, just as heaven is their place of abode. When Christ, therefore, was beheld as a luminous appearance coming from heaven, he appeared to be a celestial spirit in whom the nature of God was imaged forth. He is therefore called the image of God, the Son of God, God's

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. i. 3, 4; 2 Cor. iii. 17: 1 Cor. xv. 47.

own and first-born Son, in whom God loves his own and most closely related image and likeness, and on whose face the light of the glory of God is reflected.<sup>1</sup> Inasmuch as he is "the spirit" absolutely, in an entirely unique manner, the attributes peculiar to spirit likewise belong to him in a unique way: he is holy spirit, untouched by sin; and he is quickening spirit, the organ of God even in the first creation,<sup>2</sup> and then, again, in the new creation or resurrection, of which he is the beginning and archetype. For that reason he is called also "the Lord" absolutely, the name which is in the Old Testament given to God only. By such conceptions Christ is brought so near to God that we need feel no surprise when Paul at length calls him without reserve, "God who is over all," in order thereby to indicate his pre-eminent dignity and dominion.<sup>3</sup> At the same time, the Old Testament

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iv. 4, 6; Rom. i. 4, viii. 29, 32.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 45, viii. 6.

<sup>3</sup> Rom. ix. 5, Ὁ ὢν ἐπὶ πάντων θεός. The separation of these words from the preceding, ὁ Χριστὸς τὸ κατὰ σάρκα, appears to me forced and the less necessary as θεός in the sense of κύριος occurs also 1 Cor. viii. 5; 2 Cor. iv. 4.

monotheism is strictly adhered to by Paul: God is the absolute cause and end of all existence, including that of the Son, who has in God his head, is conscious of being as the Father's possession bound to serve Him, and, indeed, after the completion of his work, will be subordinate to Him in such a way that God alone will be all in all, none other intervening.<sup>1</sup> Considered from this aspect, Christ is therefore as truly the archetypal image of man as he is, on the other hand, the image of God; it is his celestial image which we shall sometime bear, into likeness to which the elect will be fashioned, into which they will be transformed.<sup>2</sup> This intermediate position between God and man assigned to Christ is expressed particularly plainly in the passage (1 Cor. xi. 3), according to which Christ is the head of every man, and God the head of Christ. As "the head of every man," Christ is the creative archetype by which and after which the earthly Adam was created; he is therefore the celestial First Man, or ideal Man, in whom mankind beholds its likeness to God repre-

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. iii. 23, xi. 3, xv. 28; Rom. vi. 10.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 48, 49; Rom. viii. 29; 2 Cor. iv. 18; Phil. iii. 21.

sented and anticipated, but who does not enter into the earthly phenomenal world until after the natural man, and is therefore called "the last Adam, the second Man from heaven."<sup>1</sup> It is the less allowable to overlook this side of the Pauline Christology, as it is of essential importance in its bearing on his doctrine of atonement, as we shall soon see; nor is it in any way inconsistent with the other side of it—the holy spirituality and divine sonship of Christ; in fact, according to Paul, the earthly man (ἀνὴρ) is an image and ray of God, and we are really all intended to become sons of God and spiritual men.<sup>2</sup> Paul sees, therefore, that which men are intended to *become* according to the Divine purpose *realized*, in archetypal and primæval manner, in Christ as the celestial man; for which reason he calls him also "the first-born amongst many brethren." As such, he can also represent his brethren before God, by entering into fellowship with them, taking their guilt upon himself, and transfer-

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 45, 47.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. xi. 7; Rom. viii. 29, 9, 14 sq.; Gal. iii. 26.

ring his righteousness to them. For this very purpose, Paul goes on to teach, God has sent his Son into terrestrial life, in a body of flesh similar to our own and by means of birth from a woman.<sup>1</sup> As Paul understood it, this was not an "incarnation" (*Menschwerdung*) in the strict doctrinal sense, inasmuch as the Son of God was really the celestial man and head of the human race before his appearance on the earth; he did not need therefore to take upon him a human nature, as orthodox theology teaches, but, according<sup>1</sup> to Paul, he simply exchanged the form of his celestial existence, or his godlike body of light, for the earthly form of existence, or a body of flesh like that of men. This emptying and humiliation of himself to earthly poverty and servitude was an act of obedience to the will of God and of love to his human brethren.<sup>2</sup> According to Paul, therefore, the terrestrial Jesus is the appearance of the celestial Son of God and archetypal man Christ clothed in a body

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. viii. 3; Gal. iv. 4.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. viii. 9; Phil. ii. 5. 6.

of flesh, which we may express in modern forms of thought by saying, *he is the embodied Ideal of religious and divine humanity, of its filial relationship to God and of fraternal love between its own members.*

We might therefore regard it, according to our mode of thought, as most natural and probable that precisely this appearance of a holy human life was the object of the sending of Christ and the means of the salvation of the sinful world. However, frequently as the teaching of Paul is thus interpreted, particularly in recent theology, such was by no means his idea. If it had been, how could the earthly life of Jesus have been of such little importance to him, as we have seen was actually the case? On the contrary, that the *death* rather than the life of Jesus should be regarded by Paul as the divinely-ordained means of salvation, undoubtedly corresponds much more closely with the origin of his Christology. According to his view, Christ was sent in human flesh—and under the Law—simply in order to die for us the death of the curse of the Law, and thereby to liberate us for ever from the curse and the servitude of the Law in every



form and to make us sons of God. It cannot be the business of a historical study to criticise this doctrine, but only to understand it in its origin; and the more fully we understand the motive forces of it in Paul's own thought, the sooner shall we be able to distinguish its lasting truth from its historical form. What were the motive forces of it in his mind?

In the first place, it is beyond doubt that it was from the principles of Pharisaic theology that Paul started. In that theology the legal Jewish conception of the religious relation prevailed absolutely.<sup>1</sup> Every sin, according to the Jewish school, is a transgression which, in so far as it has not been made good, or atoned for, by voluntary penance, demands rigorous punishment. According to the Pharisaic view, forgiveness without penance is as little possible with God as in the law of states. But the divine righteousness requires simply that the Law shall in some way have its justice vin-

---

<sup>1</sup> I refer for the proofs of this to the account, derived from the original sources, given in Weber's *System der Altsynagogalen Theologie* (Leipzig, 1880), §§ 67—72.

dedicated, it being a matter of indifference on whom the punishment is executed or by whom the atonement in satisfaction of the guilt is presented. The innocent, therefore, may pay the atonement for the guilty, and thereby redeem the latter from the punishment. Thus in Jewish theology the undeserved suffering of the righteous especially is regarded as a substitutionary means of atonement, the guilt-removing virtue of which may be turned to the benefit, or reckoned for the justification, of the members of their families, or even of the whole nation of Israel. The less a man needs of atonement for his own sins, the more to the advantage of others is the surrender of his life as an atoning sacrifice; on that account the death of distinguished godly men possesses an atoning and redeeming virtue for the entire nation equal to that of the great day of atonement.

It is obvious how natural it must have been for Paul to make use of these prevailing views of the Pharisaic theology in explanation of the death on the cross of the Messiah Jesus. They received, however, under his hands an entirely new applica-

tion, by which the stereotyped legal Jewish form became the receptacle of an ideal and ethical thought of the greatest significance. This was primarily and especially connected with Paul's peculiar view of the person of Christ. Inasmuch as Christ is not simply a righteous man after the Jewish ideal, not merely an ordinary earthly man, but the holy Son of God and Man from heaven, he has not to suffer at all for sin of his own; his death, therefore, as the voluntary taking upon himself of the curse of the Law, may be reckoned exclusively to the advantage of others. And to whose advantage will it be reckoned? To that of the Jews only? But Christ is not merely a son of Abraham; he is much rather the archetypal Man from heaven, the representative Head of *all* men, who in his life and death therefore legally represents the entire race, just as everywhere the head of a family or of a nation acts on behalf of either collectively. If the one, therefore, who is the Head of all died for all, his death is not simply that of an individual, but it denotes the death of all; the death of the one representative of all has legally before the Divine tribunal the same validity as if it

had been the death of all, as if they had all collectively died in and with their Head.<sup>1</sup> But in that case the curse of the Law has been atoned for on behalf of all; for when once death has been inflicted, the claim of the Law has been satisfied; it has nothing more to condemn and nothing more to demand; in fact, it rules over a man only as long as he lives; after he is dead it possesses no more right and no more power. As, then, all have died in and with their representative Head, the legal claim of the Law has been satisfied and annulled for all; they are dead in view of both its curse and its demands; it has lost its power and validity for all; all are now entirely free from it, and may become the possession of a new Lord. In this sense, therefore, Paul conceives the death of Christ as the divinely-ordained propitiation by which God "reconciled the world unto himself, no more imputing to them their sins:" in this sense he says, God "sent his Son, born of a woman and put under the Law, that he might redeem them that were under the

---

<sup>1</sup>2 Cor. v. 15.

Law, that we might receive the adoption of sons ;” Christ has “redeemed us from the curse of the Law, being made a curse for us,” or God “made him to be sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in him ;” He “set him forth as a propitiation in his blood by faith,” and “in his flesh condemned sin ;” he “died once to sin,” and with his death we also were made dead as regards sin and the Law by means of his slain body.<sup>1</sup> In all these passages the subject is an atonement instituted by God in the death of Christ, by which the Law received its due, while at the same time its claims were cancelled once for all and for all men ; it is an objective divine act of propitiation on behalf of the whole world, since the whole world, that is mankind, was represented in the propitiatory death of its Head. We see how the Pauline universalism and antinomianism have their roots in the centre of his theology, in his “word of the Cross.”

However, this view of the objective aspects of

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. v. 19, 21 ; Gal. iv. 4, iii. 13 ; Rom. viii. 3, iii. 25, vi. 10, 11, vii. 4.

the matter, according to which the reconciliation of the world in the death of Christ was effected by a divine act, forms only one side of it, to which we must at once add the other, the subjective aspect of it, without which we should most disastrously misunderstand the Apostle's meaning. The objective reconciliation of the world effected in Christ's death can, after all, benefit actually in their own personal consciousness only those who know and acknowledge it, who know and feel themselves in their solidarity with Christ<sup>•</sup> to be so much one with him as to be able to appropriate inwardly his death and celestial life, and inwardly live over again his life and death; those only, in a word, who truly *believe* on Christ. Thus the idea of "substitution" in Paul's view receives its complement and realization in the mysticism of his conception of faith. While Christ as the celestial Man objectively represents the whole race, that relation becomes a subjective reality of the religious consciousness only in the case of those who connect themselves with him in faith in such a way as to grow together with him into *one* spirit and *one* body, as to find in him their head, their soul, their

life and self, and he in them his body, his members and his temple.<sup>1</sup> Thereby the idea of "one for all" receives the stricter meaning of "all in and with one:" thus regarded, the death of Christ is no longer merely the once occurring outward fact, which avails instead of the death of all by mere forensic substitution or imputation, but it becomes to a certain extent the actual ethical experience of the believers themselves, their common inward fellowship with Christ in his life and death. The Law possesses, therefore, no more claim of any kind upon these partakers with Christ in his life and death than upon Christ himself; its curse has been removed from them; their guilt has been cancelled; they have therefore been acquitted, justified before God, and are at peace with Him. And with this the servile spirit of fear gives place to the filial spirit of confidence, which plants in the heart the assurance of the love of God, and therewith creates grateful and obedient love to God and Christ in

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. vi. 17, 15, 19; Rom. vi. 5, 8, 9, 10; Gal. ii. 20; Phil. i. 21, iii. 9, 10.

return. When, in baptism, as the sacramental act of faith, the believer has "put on Christ," that is, has become personally one with him,<sup>1</sup> he has at the same time entered into a new relation to God: God beholds him no longer as the sinner he once was, but as the new man he now is in Christ, and so as sharing the righteousness of Christ; on the other hand, man no longer looks upon God as the angry Judge, but as the Father, who has guaranteed His love to all His sons in His first-born Son. Hence in the fact that one died for all, and all feel they have died and live with him, in truth, old things have passed away and all things have become new, a new creature, conscious of being in Christ reconciled to God and righteous before Him;<sup>2</sup> the ideal of a son of God has in the heart of the believer been transformed into the living reality of the conscious and felt relationship of a child to God. It is only when this is perceived that the Pauline doctrine of atonement is understood in its full meaning.

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. iii. 27.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. v. 17, 21.



If from this position we now glance back to the starting-point of this doctrine, we at once perceive that we have reached, at the end of the way we have trodden, an entirely different conception of God from that from which we set out. *There* it was still the God of the Jewish *legal* consciousness, the righteous Judge, who does not mercifully forgive but who demands punishment or atonement, who will see the Law receive rigorously its due, even though he must execute its curse on His own Son. *Here*, on the contrary, it is 'the God of the Christian *filial* consciousness, as Jesus bore Him in his heart; the God of paternal love, who does not require from us atonement or satisfaction before He can forgive, who rather goes to meet the prodigal son, and from the fulness of His forgiving and beneficent love sets everything right. This double character of the Pauline conception of God is undoubtedly psychologically quite intelligible: it is the two souls which were always in conflict with each other in Paul's breast that are reflected in it: the servile spirit of the Law and the filial spirit of the Gospel, Pharisaic thought and Christian feeling,

the theology of the Rabbi and the experience of the Apostle. Now, it is true that these two aspects do not occupy such a position of equality towards each other as to keep Paul in an attitude of fruitless wavering between the two standpoints; but the one of them is everywhere only the starting-point and the other the goal of his dialectics; the one supplies only the instruments and forms of his argumentation, the other the living and eternal religious subject-matter. Nevertheless, it cannot be denied that precisely in this peculiar oscillation and wavering between two different conceptions of God, which, treated logically, exclude and cancel each other, consists the difficulty in understanding Paul's theology, and is found the explanation of the striking fact that in all ages it has been its lot to be most differently interpreted and estimated, and that it has so rarely been faithfully reproduced. Neither can it be denied that the theory of the vicarious atonement of Christ and the imputed righteousness of faith may present to the thinker serious difficulties of a logical and ethical nature, inasmuch as it is only a theory and object of intel-

lectual belief; but in practical religious life these difficulties disappear of themselves, because in living faith, in the devotion of the heart to the personal ideal of the Son of God, a man really becomes inwardly a new creature, and in this new state of life is conscious of being reconciled to God, is therefore really righteous, that is, stands in the right filial relation to God, and therein finds likewise the strength of love required for right moral conduct towards his fellow-men.

It was just this practically beneficial consequence of his doctrine of faith which Paul had special reason to prove, inasmuch as he was compelled to hear from even his earliest opponents the accusation that it produced morally injurious effects. "Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?" he makes his Judaizing opponents ask.<sup>1</sup> And he says in reply, "God forbid! We who died to sin, how shall we any longer live therein? Or know ye not that all we who were baptized into Christ were baptized into his death? We were buried with him,

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. vi. 1.

therefore, through baptism into his death, that like as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, so we also might walk in newness of life. For if we have become united with him through the likeness of his death, we shall be also by that of his resurrection." In this instance also Paul goes back again to his central idea of mystical fellowship with Christ, as he sees it established in the confession of faith in baptism; but this time he draws the inferences from it in a new direction. As members of the crucified and risen Christ, Christians have likewise died as regards their old man and have entered upon a new existence. Therewith they have been redeemed from the curse and compulsion of the Law and have become free children of God. But together with this change of religious relation to God, the foundation of a new divine life has been laid, and that in the two-fold sense that both the obligation and the power to lead another life have been supplied. Christians are bound to lead a new life by the motive of gratitude towards the Lord, to whose act of love and self-sacrifice they owe their new and happy

state. For "he died for all, that they who live should live no longer unto themselves, but unto him who died for them and rose again."<sup>1</sup> Their newly granted life is not their own independent property, which they may employ after their own or another's pleasure, but it belongs of right to the Lord who has bought them at so dear a price for his own possession. As, therefore, Christ lives as the exalted Lord only unto God, so in like manner the life of those who belong to him must be an unbroken service of God. The love of God and Christ must fill their heart, God's Spirit lead them to all that is good; their body must be His temple; their members, weapons of righteousness; their eating and drinking and all they do must redound to the glory of God. That same faith in Christ which has delivered Christians from the killing Law of the letter, has likewise made them subject to the life-giving Law of the spirit of Christ. This new Law is no longer merely an outward letter, which could only command and judge, but it is the inward

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. v. 15.

impulse of love, of enthusiasm, of devotion and reverence, which desires nothing else than to please and become like him who is its life, its highest good, its true self. This new Law of Christ, therefore, brings with the obligation likewise the power of meeting it, for it is happily no longer a frigid command, which would impose compulsion on the resolves of the heart; it is, on the contrary, the most living impulse of the inmost heart itself: "The love of Christ constraineth us. Therefore I live no longer, but Christ liveth in me. Sin will no more have dominion over us, for we are not under the Law, but under grace."<sup>1</sup>

It is evident that Paul has herewith propounded a new divine principle of greatest moment, a principle equally far removed from both Heathen license and Jewish legalism. In the reverent love of the divine ideal of life which he beheld personified in Christ, he found that inward freedom which was raised as far above the Jewish servitude of ordinances as it was above the Heathen servitude of

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. v. 5, 14; Gal. ii. 20; Rom. vi. 14.

the flesh and worldly lust—that inward freedom which, unlike that of the Stoics, for instance, is not purchased by the deadening of the affections, by the hardening of the soul in the heartless coldness of “apathy,” but which bears within itself the source of all life and happiness—love, which is the fulfilling of the Law. On that account this ethical principle was able to influence diseased and rent humanity in a very different way from Stoicism, animating and rejuvenating, healing and uniting it. Whilst Stoic cosmopolitanism only produced indifference towards the natural ties and limitations of society, Christian love, as Paul proclaimed it, encircled the disunited nations and countries with a uniting bond, made Jews and Greeks, slaves and free men, man and woman, one in Christ.<sup>1</sup> Thereby the Apostle planted that tree of humanity in human society under the branches of which we still dwell, and find shelter and protection for our highest possessions. This meritorious service is not essentially lessened by the

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. iii. 28.

fact that the thorough carrying out of this great new principle in some particular departments of moral life remained in Paul's case defective in several respects. It is in fact, to our feeling, somewhat surprising that the Apostle of Christian freedom should pronounce slavery a matter of indifference, and advise the slave to remain in his condition even when he might become free.<sup>1</sup> Neither does it answer to our conception of the importance of the judicial institutions of the state, when the Apostle forbids the Christians of Corinth to seek justice before the secular tribunals.<sup>2</sup> It really shocks our feeling of the sacred dignity of the marriage state, when Paul suffers it only as a necessary evil for the prevention of unchastity, and in general describes the unmarried state as better and holier.<sup>3</sup> In this respect Protestantism has carried out Paul's principle, "All things are yours," more consistently than he himself did, by completely setting aside the historically conditioned limita-

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. vii. 21.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. vi. 1 sq.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. vii. 1 sq., 7, 32 sq., 38, 40.



tions with which the Apostle himself was still hampered.

These limitations arose partly from the expectation of the speedy return of Christ to close that period of the world, an expectation which Paul shared with the first Christians universally, and partly from the dualistic view of the relation of sense and spirit which Paul held in common with his age generally. The latter was one of those points in which Jewish and Greek thought in that age met in practical agreement, although the theoretical principles were on each side different. For it is certainly true that the Pauline antithesis of flesh and spirit must not without modification be identified with that of Plato and Philo; the Pauline antithesis did not originate in Greek philosophy, but directly in Jewish theology, and indirectly in the Old Testament. The latter understood by "flesh" the earthly creature of sense, particularly mankind in its antithesis to God, whose nature is supersensible and supermundane spirit, the creative and holy energy of life. And with the idea of natural weakness and impurity, which belong

to the sense nature of flesh, was early connected, as, for instance, in the Book of Job,<sup>1</sup> the ethical idea of weakness and impurity, in virtue of which the flesh is made subject to both sin and death. This theory was afterwards combined by Rabbinic theology in a peculiar way with the doctrine of the fall of Adam. In consequence of that first sin, it was taught in the Synagogue, not death alone, but sin, prevailed amongst men; for the tendencies to evil, the possibility of which had existed from the beginning in the human body, thereupon attained a new and almost irresistible supremacy over the tendencies of the soul to good, and ruled human action with despotic power.<sup>2</sup> When, notwithstanding, Jewish theology imposed on man the duty of attaining to perfect righteousness by his own effort, it was in evident contradiction with the above psychological premises, a contradiction, moreover, similarly met with in the

---

<sup>1</sup> Job. iv. 17 sq., xiv. 4, xv. 14 sq.; comp. also Gen. vi. 3; Ps. ciii. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. Weber, *System der Altsynagogalen Theologie*, §§ 47—50.

ethics of Stoicism of that period. Nor on this point of doctrine has Paul put forward anything like an entirely new theory, but only with greater rigour drawn out the Pharisaic theory into its consequences. Sin and death he conceives<sup>1</sup> as entering the world through Adam, and thenceforth ruling with royal despotism all men, who are, as children of Adam, sold by their fleshly nature to that sovereign power. For in the body, the earthly and sense part of the natural man, evil desire has set up its seat, or, as it were, its citadal, whence, by means of the tendencies and impulses of the flesh in the members, it makes the will its servant, so that it brings forth all kinds of sin, not merely sins of a sensual but also of a spiritual nature, such as idolatry and selfish wickedness. It is true, the inward man, by virtue of the good impulses of his reason, can condemn the dominance of sin in his members, but he is unable actually to subdue it, because he is so sold under sin as to feel it as a

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. v. 12—21, vii. 5, 13—25, viii. 7, 13; Gal. v. 17 sq.; 1 Cor. xv. 21, 47—50.

“law,” that is, as a constant despotic power which holds his better self in captivity. And against that “law,” even the revealed Law of God, holy and good as it is, avails nothing, because it is weakened by sin in the flesh; in fact, it is, on the contrary, such as by its prohibition to provoke sin to fuller development. With this Paul established by the anthropological method the conviction (of which he had, moreover, become assured by dogmatical inferences from the atoning death of Christ), that by the works of the Law no flesh could become righteous. Why had previously all his eager endeavour after righteousness been in vain? Now he could answer that question, since he also knew the answer to another painful one, “O wretched man that I am, who will deliver me from the body of this death?” namely, “The law of the spirit of life in Christ hath made me free from the law of sin and of death!”

Just as Paul, when looking back upon his former condition from the new one of conscious salvation, formed such a profound conception of the hopeless ruin of the natural man as ruled by the sin in his

flesh, that he spoke of a "law of sin," so with like profundity he recognized the new life in Christ as a "law of the spirit." With that conception, again, he gave to a traditionary idea a new turn of the greatest significance and rich in results. In the First Church it was already an established supposition that the holy spirit was received by faith and baptism into the Messiah, a supposition which was based on Old Testament promises of the outpouring of the spirit at the time of salvation.<sup>1</sup> But as the holy spirit in the Old Testament was not conceived as the constant inward principle of life in the people of God, but as a supernatural divine power, which descended temporarily upon individuals and produced extraordinary effects for definite purposes, so likewise in the First Church it was conceived as the supernatural divine power which called forth extraordinary states and efforts of a remarkable kind. Thus the ecstatic condition of speaking with tongues, the apocalyptic gift of prophecy, the individual gift of the "word of wisdom,"

---

<sup>1</sup> Acts ii. 33, 38, x. 44, 45 ; comp. Joel iii. 1 ; Ezek. xxxvi. 27.

the special power of faith for miraculous cures and similar extraordinary *charismata*, were looked upon as the works and signs of the Messianic spirit, those speaking with tongues in Corinth, for instance, being regarded as "spiritual men" pre-eminently.<sup>1</sup> Paul, it is true, shared that view; he did not, however, rest satisfied with it, but extended and deepened the significance of the spirit. Feeling himself by his faith in the Lord, who is the spirit, made into *one* spirit with him, he saw in the holy spirit the indwelling and constant principle, or "law," of his new life, and a principle which does not manifest itself merely in certain extraordinary impulses and miraculous powers, but as the creative energy of a "new creature," in the renewing of the heart, in the sanctification of the entire life, in the generation of every Christian virtue, in a growing likeness to the image of Christ. The spirit of Christ manifests itself not merely in the mystical convulsions of an obscure and speechless emotional excitement, but in the distinct and calm feeling

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xii. 14.

of the peace and joy of a child of God conscious of being reconciled with its Father;<sup>1</sup> not merely in apocalyptic visions of miraculous things in the future, but in a clear and reasonable knowledge of those things which have been given us by God, and in a wide view of the wonderful ways and judgments of God in the course of the world's history;<sup>2</sup> not merely in theurgic powers and miraculous operations of an abrupt character, but in the constant moral power of love, which is the greatest of miracles.<sup>3</sup> Herewith Paul inaugurated that decisive change of view by which Christianity made the transition from the miraculous world of ecstatic feeling and apocalyptic phantasy, into the true spiritual world of religious and moral personal life, and by which it could become the regenerating leaven of the history of mankind. Not as if he had on that account set aside or disregarded the

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. v. 5, viii. 15, 38, xv. 13; Gal. iv. 6, v. 22.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. ii. 7—16, xii. 8.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. xii. 31—xiii. 13; Gal. v. 6, 13, 22; Rom. xiii. 10, xiv. 17 sq.

apocalyptic future hopes of the First Church; no, the expectation of the speedy return of Christ, of the resurrection of the dead, of the last judgment and end of the world, was as certain and as important to him as to any one of the earliest Christians; but knowing that he already possessed, as a present inner reality and operative power,<sup>1</sup> the Christian spirit of the new life of the kingdom of God, which others looked for only in the miraculous catastrophes of the future, he bridged over the chasm dividing the next world from this, transforming the transcendental Messianic kingdom of Jewish and primitive Christian hope into the moral kingdom of God of the Christian Church, with its "life in the spirit" and its faith and love. With this, however, Paul had only given a new theological turn to the thought which Jesus had given expression to in his popular parables of the Mustard-seed and the Leaven, thereby preserving that mustard-seed from the danger of being choked by the luxuriantly rampant branches of apocalyptic phantasy.

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. vi. 4, vii. 6, viii. 9, 10, xiv. 17; 2 Cor. iv. 7 sq., v. 17, vi. 2, 10; Gal. v. 6, 25.



That a religious idea of such mystical and speculative profundity as the Pauline doctrine of the holy spirit, however, might take root in the consciousness of the Church, it necessarily required a somewhat massive outward shell, which might protect and preserve the noble fruit within, while at the same time it concealed and made it unrecognizable to the superficial eye. A shell of this kind was supplied not only in dogmatic Christology as founded by Paul and further carried out by the theology of the Church, but "also in the mystical view of the sacraments. In this respect also Paul put an original construction on traditional usages, bringing them into the closest relation with the central idea of his theology. *Baptism*, which in the First Church had been only a public act of repentance and profession, became in Paul's theology<sup>1</sup> a mystical act of implantation in the fellowship of Christ's life and death by means of a sacramental imitation and appropriation of the act of redemption effected originally and typically in

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. vi. 3 sq.; Gal. iii. 27.

Christ; for in immersion beneath the water, Christ's death and burial, and in emersion from the water, his resurrection, are imitated in dramatic symbolism. Thus baptism became the sacrament of regeneration through the spirit, by which the old life of the sinful flesh was done away with, and a new creature, a holy spiritual life devoted to God, was born and incorporated as a living member with the body of Christ. The meals of love of the First Church likewise received first from Paul<sup>1</sup> the significance of strictly sacramental acts of worship. When the Church solemnizes the *Lord's Supper*, the partaking of the consecrated cup and bread is not simply a symbolical act in remembrance of the shed blood and the broken body of Christ, but it is also the means of effecting a mystical union with the crucified Head of the Church; for they who partake of those symbols of his death thereby inwardly appropriate the death of Christ himself, entering thus into the closest covenant with him and one another for life and death. But as the counterpart of this mys-

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. x. 16 sq., xi. 23—30.

terious union with Christ, realized in a devout observance of the rite, must be placed the punitive effect of an undevout observance of it, which Paul is disposed to discover in the cases of sickness and death occurring in the Church. The affinity of ideas of this kind with certain features of Heathen sacrifices and mysteries, was referred to even by Paul himself, and was variously dwelt upon by the Church Fathers; neither can it be denied that the subsequent grosser conceptions of the doctrine of the sacraments held by the Church were naturally connected with this Pauline theory of the sacraments of Baptism and the Eucharist. Nevertheless, it is only those who can find it conceivable that the Church could have been satisfied with a cultus with no mysteries who will on that account raise a complaint against Paul. That he discovered, by reference to the central fact of salvation in the death of Christ, the means of satisfying the need, founded in human nature, of a mystical cultus, we are convinced is one of those marvellous inspirations of genius on which history itself has set its seal, and which we, therefore, ought not to criticise with cold

rationalism, but to honour with thankful and reverent piety.

In possession of that spirit which searches even the depths of Deity, Paul finally obtained new and profound insight into the counsels and ways of the Divine government of the world. Starting from the anticipations of the Prophets, but giving them a deeper meaning in the light of the Christian idea of salvation, he sketched a new philosophy of religious history, which served as a magnificent historical setting and proof for his theological ideas. He was led to it by the necessity of justifying his teaching and labours to the Jewish and Jewish-Christian mind, which had taken serious offence especially at two points: one of which concerned the Pauline view of the Mosaic Law; the other, the actual result of his mission to the Heathen, in consequence of which the Heathen Christians grew every day more important than the Jewish Christians. When Paul taught that Christ was the end of the Law and was sent to redeem us from the Law,<sup>1</sup> it appeared to the Jew that the character of

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. x. 4; Gal. iv. 5.

revelation belonging to the Law was thereby denied ; for, he asked, how could a Law given by God be transient ? And when, by the conversion of large numbers of the Heathen, the Jewish portion of the Messianic Church was more and more outstripped and reduced to a minority, the promises of the Prophets, which were given, surely, in the first instance and principally to the children of Abraham, seemed to the Jew to lose their validity. The Law and the Prophets, the entire Oracles of God, seemed therefore to be rendered doubtful by Paul. How could that accord with the will of God, whose word is undoubtedly incapable of change or failure ? And how could it accord with the intention of the Messiah Jesus, who had said, surely, that he had not come to destroy, but to fulfil the Law and the Prophets ? Paul was the more urgently led to remove such natural scruples, as the divine revelation of the Law and the Prophets was, beyond doubt, to himself likewise an established certainty. The task before him was, therefore, to reconcile this conviction, held no less firmly by himself than by his opponents, with his doctrine of the end of the Mosaic Law and

of the call of the Heathen into the Messianic kingdom. The task was, in fact, not easy, and Paul brought to its accomplishment all the acuteness of his Rabbinical dialectics and all the profundity of his Christian gnosis.

From our modern point of view, we might perhaps suppose that the simplest means of reconciling the transient nature of the Mosaic Law with its revealed origin, would have been to distinguish between its ethical and ceremonial constituents. The Pauline doctrine of the Law has often been understood as if his contention had been directed against the ceremonial Law only, which he is supposed to have distinguished from the moral precepts, as the perishable from the eternal element. But this distinction is opposed to the proper sense of Paul's theory of the Law. He shared, on the contrary, with the Jews generally the supposition that the Law was an indivisible whole, and in all its parts an immediate divine revelation; a criticism of the matter of the Law, a distinction between its lasting and transient elements, was, therefore, quite out of the question in Paul's case. In order to reach

his object, he was obliged accordingly to adopt another course—the historico-teleological method. With a boldness of paradox such as is possible only to a religious genius, Paul undertook to prove, from the history of divine revelation itself, the transient nature of the revealed Law. The point at which he applied the lever of his method of proof was the relation of the Law to the promises. This very relation had beyond doubt already often occupied the attention of the Pharisee Paul; indeed, the profoundest antinomy, the most trying enigma of the Pharisaic theology, was involved precisely in the fact, that the immediate fulfilment of the promises by God was expected, while at the same time it was believed to be conditioned by the complete fulfilment on man's part of the Law, a fulfilment which had always been and still remained incomplete. The solution of this enigma, which was impossible from the Jewish point of view, dawned upon Paul at the cross of Christ: with the certainty that God on His part offers us, as a gift of grace through Christ, the righteousness we cannot possibly fulfil, the conclusion was of itself suggested to him, that

in that case the Law could not from the first have been given with the purpose of making the Divine fulfilment of the promises dependent on its fulfilment by man. But then the question arose, For what end can the Law have been given by God, if it is not meant to be the condition of the attainment of salvation? To this Paul replies with the bold paradox, The Law came in between the promise and the fulfilment, not in order to bring about righteousness, which it can never do, and by which it would really annul the grace of the promise, but, on the contrary, in order to occasion transgression, to provoke the sinful desires of the flesh to activity, to bring to painful consciousness the guilt of sin—in a word, to hold mankind captive under the ban of the wretchedness of sin, until the longed-for salvation through the grace of God in Christ should come.<sup>1</sup> The Law is, according to this, given by God, it is true, and forms an essential member in the economy of the Divine plan of salvation, the object of which is

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. iii. 19—24; Rom. v. 20, 21, iv. 15, iii. 20, vii. 5, 7—13, xi. 32.



the formation of a holy people of God; but the Law does not promote this object as a direct and positive means of righteousness, as the Jew supposed, but only indirectly and negatively, inasmuch as it is in the first instance really a means of unrighteousness, of the increase of sin, of producing the consciousness of guilt and helplessness and the sense of the need of redemption. Thus the Law had from the first only the importance of a perishable instrument, the destiny of which was to pass away when its object had been attained; it was intended as a schoolmaster to keep mankind, while in its minority, in subjection until the time when with faith in the Son of God the freedom of the full-aged sons of God should appear.

From this point of view the history of mankind divides itself in the Apostle's mind into three ages, which correspond, again, to the three principles of Promise, Law and Fulfilment, or to the three typical names of Abraham, Moses and Christ. The first age is that of the Patriarchs, when faith in the promise still ruled without law;<sup>1</sup> that is the age of

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. iii. 16—18; Rom. iv. 5, 13.

the childhood of the race, the happy period of innocence, when sin was still unknown, because nothing was then known of the command, "Thou shalt not indulge desire."<sup>1</sup> Then comes the Law of Moses, as the schoolmaster who keeps the youth under the compulsion of his commands and prohibitions, and thereby provokes his will to resistance, calls into existence his desire to transgress, and holds the transgressor captive under the torture of the sense of guilt;<sup>2</sup> that is the age of the covenant of the Law, the transient nature of which the Apostle sees symbolized in the vanishing of the glorious light on the countenance of Moses.<sup>3</sup> At last, at the time appointed by God, the fulfilment of the promise, and therewith the end of the covenant of Law, appeared; for by faith in the Son of God we have become sons of God, who are no longer under the pædagogus: for the servile spirit of fear has been substituted the filial spirit of confidence, which finds its early prototype in the faith of Abraham. But the

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. vii. 7.

<sup>2</sup> Gal. iii. 23 sq., iv. 1 sq.; Rom. vii. 8 sq.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Cor. iii. 13 sq.

divine covenant of promise made with the Fathers has now been fulfilled in a higher form; for the contradiction between desire and duty, which in their time was only prospective, has now been overcome and reconciled in that spirit of sonship which is at the same time a spirit of freedom and love. On this account the new covenant of the spirit is an eternal covenant, the glory of which remains for ever.

Thus the enigma and the stumbling-block to the Jewish mind involved in the idea of the Law being a divine revelation and yet of transient validity, were in the Apostle's case removed by the supposition of a divine education of the human race. And the same point of view of a divine teleology conducts him likewise to the solution of the other enigma, namely, of the possibility of the nation to which the promises were given being outstripped in the Messianic kingdom by the Gentiles. First of all,<sup>1</sup> it is true, Paul points the Jews, who see in this order of things a violation of the prerogatives promised to them, to the unconditionality of the

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. ix. 6—29. -

Divine will, to contend with which is altogether unbecoming in the creature. Just as God in the times of the Patriarchs, by the free choice of His grace, had mercy on the one and rejected the other, so now again it is His free grace which permits the Gentiles to experience His compassion. And Israel's hardening, he goes on to show,<sup>1</sup> is nothing surprising, but simply proves once more that it continues to be the same stiff-necked and rebellious people of which the Prophets had from the beginning to complain, so that its remaining behind the Gentiles is as much its own fault as God's appointment. Nevertheless, God had not therein Israel's definitive loss in view; His word of promise has not for ever lost its validity. It is only temporarily that He has caused the Jews to fall behind, with the design that their holding aloof might make possible the approach of the Gentiles, and their loss promote the Gentiles' gain. But when once this object has been attained, when once the fulness of the Heathen has entered into the kingdom of God, then will come Israel's

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. ix. 30—x. 21.

turn to be received; the precedence of the Heathen will provoke those who are now rebellious to jealous imitation, and thus the gracious purposes of God will finally be accomplished in the case of all.<sup>1</sup> All the wonderful ways and leadings of the world's history, not excepting even the sin and error of men, must at last serve as means of promoting the plan of salvation projected by Divine love and wisdom. Thus all the contradictions of time are harmoniously reconciled in the knowledge of that God from whom and through whom and to whom are all things!

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xi.

**LECTURE III.**

**THE CONFLICT OF THE APOSTLE TO THE GENTILES  
WITH JEWISH CHRISTIANS.**



### LECTURE III.

## THE CONFLICT OF THE APOSTLE TO THE GENTILES WITH JEWISH CHRISTIANS.

---

A GLANCE, in our last Lecture at the chief points of Paul's teaching has fully confirmed the Apostle's claim with regard to his gospel, namely, that it was an original creation of an inward revelation of the spirit of Christ, independent of the tradition of the First Church, and differing from it in essential points. In such circumstances, instead of being astonished that it came at last to animated conflicts between Paul and the Jewish Christians, we must rather be surprised that those conflicts did not break out much earlier. During the fourteen years of his first missionary labours in the regions of Syria and Cilicia, such unbroken harmony existed between himself and the churches of Judea, that,



according to his own statement, they praised God for the fruits of his mission.<sup>1</sup> It is possible that Paul himself had not then realized the full consequences involved in his principles with regard to Christian freedom from the Law; it is likewise possible that in Judea no accurate information was possessed regarding the state of things in churches at a considerable distance, or that, in delight at the general results, the mixture of the Gentile Christian elements and the free intercourse of the Jewish with the Gentile believers were overlooked. But when, with the further extension of the mission of Paul into Heathen territory, increasing numbers of Heathen churches were formed, and at the same time in the church of the Syrian capital, Antioch, the Gentile element grew so largely in numbers and influence that the action of the whole community there took a constantly freer form, this development of things began to excite attention in Jerusalem, and the simple unrestrained delight at Paul's success gave place to mistrustful anxiety as to the

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. i. 21.

incalculable consequences of such proceedings. The most zealous considered it wrong to continue inactive spectators of the Apostle's line of action, and went themselves to Antioch to observe and to oppose on the spot the freer customs that had sprung up. The agitation set on foot by these "false brethren brought in unawares," as Paul describes them,<sup>1</sup> threw the mixed community at Antioch into no little commotion, especially as these people naturally appealed to the authority of the parent church.

We may imagine in what a painful situation the Apostle Paul consequently found himself. If the party zealous for the Law should be successful with their demand that the believing Gentiles must by circumcision submit to the Jewish Law, and if it should be confirmed that in this demand they really had the parent church, together with the Apostles, on their side, the mission to the Gentiles was at an end, the life-work of the Apostle to the Heathen was hopeless. For if he had submitted to their requirement of the Law, there was

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. ii. 4; comp. Acts xv. 1.

no more room to hope for any great success in his mission to the Heathen, the Jewish Law would have become an invincible hindrance to the conversion of the Heathen to Christ. If Paul had, on the other hand, simply ignored the demands of the Judaizers, without coming to any understanding with the earlier Apostles and obtaining their sanction for his Gentile mission, with its freedom from the Law, he would have severed the connection of his Heathen churches with the parent church, and the Gentile Church, thus isolated from the very first and degraded to a sect, would hardly have been able long to maintain its existence. The continuance or the destruction of his life-work depended therefore now, to Paul's mind, on whether he succeeded in obtaining from the parent church and its leaders the acknowledgment of their Christian fellowship for his Gentile Christians as such. In this critical moment, as Paul himself relates, it was the inward spiritual voice of a "revelation" which matured in his mind the resolution to overcome the crisis by the most direct, though, it must be allowed, the most hazardous course—by a personal

discussion of the matter with the parent church, and especially with its principal leaders. Paul naturally communicated his plan, which so closely concerned it, to the church at Antioch; and the church must then have sanctioned his proposal and adopted it as the resolution of the body, and accordingly deputed the Apostle himself, together with Barnabas, as its official and trusted delegates to Jerusalem. This public sanction of the journey to Jerusalem, as it is reported in the Acts of the Apostles, is so far from excluding the origin of it as related by Paul himself, that, on the contrary, the two accounts admirably complete each other. The same may be said substantially of the accounts of the course of the subsequent transactions at Jerusalem; the agreement as to the chief points is in any case greater than the discrepancies in the details, and these discrepancies can be for the most part explained simply by the difference of the standpoint of the relaters.

When Paul made his report as to his missionary labours and their results in the Heathen world to a meeting of the church at Jerusalem (for the

account in the Epistle to the Galatians likewise compels us to suppose such a meeting), that party of zealots, to whom the "false brethren" and agitators who had crept into Antioch belonged, put forward the demand, that the converted Gentiles must be made Jews by circumcision, and that that regulation must at once be put in force by the circumcision of Titus, the Gentile companion of Paul on his journey. Paul does not tell us directly what was the reply of the meeting of the church to this requirement, yet he supplies the data for probable conjecture. In the first place, we must observe that Paul mentions, as the real occasion of the animated contention as to the circumcision of Titus, the "false brethren" that had crept in, obviously distinguishing them, therefore, as the more decided zealots, from the rest of the church. „ We must neither overlook nor over-estimate the importance of this distinction. Nowhere do we meet with any such statement as that the whole church was from the first quite on the side of Paul, and that the zealots of the Law formed merely an insignificant fraction. On the contrary, we cannot shut our

eyes to the fact, that, assuming the truth of this traditional supposition, it would be hard to comprehend how such animated contentions could arise as are undeniably recorded in both accounts alike (Gal. ii. and Acts xv.). The most probable conjecture is, therefore, that when the question was proposed to the church at Jerusalem thus definitely, whether in future there should be a Christianity without the Mosaic Law, its members at first took up no definite position with regard to it, but wavered indecisively between opposing opinions and considerations. To their strictly conservative Jewish mind it was undoubtedly a very unfamiliar idea, that they should in the future acknowledge, as brothers in faith in the Messiah, Heathen without the Law, who had hitherto always been looked upon by them as unclean and sinners. It was to be feared, too, that by such fraternization the reputation of the young Christian Church would be seriously compromised in the eyes of the Jewish people, and its reputation for righteousness greatly shaken, which naturally would not be favourable to the success of the mission to Israel itself. Moreover,

the question might well arise, whether it was possible that the Messiah Jesus, who notoriously sought not to destroy but to fulfil the Law, would acknowledge those who did not adopt the Law as fellow-citizens of the kingdom, when he should come in the immediate future to set it up. Under the influence of doubts of this kind, the feeling of the church undoubtedly inclined at first to favour the demands of the party zealous for the Law. On the other hand, however, it was after all unable to escape from the force of the impression which the reports of Paul and Barnabas as to their past successes amongst the Gentiles had produced. Was not the church obliged to discern therein practical proof that the Heathen mission was an undertaking well-pleasing to God? And had not even the Prophets foretold the coming in of the Gentiles in the days of the consummation? Were not also certain utterances of Jesus current which represented the faith of the Heathen as an example fitted to shame the unbelieving Jews? With all its Jewish conservatism, the parent church cannot have been wholly impervious to such considerations. Never-

theless, the solitary Paul, the daring innovator, evidently held a trying position against the multitude of those who had the stubborn power of custom and the scrupulous loyalty of the Jewish conscience on their side.

It was in reality therefore an extremely critical moment, on the issue of which hung nothing less than the future of Christianity; the battle of opinions inclined first to the one side and then to the other, when the chief Apostles threw their vote into the scale in favour of free Heathen Christianity. Beyond doubt, the Acts of the Apostles has reported correctly when it describes Peter as taking the initiative in that direction: although the speech which this book puts into his mouth betrays traces of the later date of its editor, we cannot doubt that it was the decisiveness of Peter's temperament, and still more his unreserved love of the Lord Jesus, which caused him to put aside all other considerations and extend to the Apostle of the Gentiles the right-hand of fellowship. This act of noble, self-denying magnanimity saved the future of Christianity in a critical moment; and for that reason



the Church justly holds the memory of Peter in high honour. James, the brother of the Lord, and the Apostle John likewise, followed the example of Peter and confirmed the bond of brotherhood; but they (at all events James) did not do this as unreservedly as Peter. For undoubtedly the Acts of the Apostles is justified in making the narrower and more strictly Jewish spirit of James accountable for the conditions by which the fraternal alliance was restricted; he, moreover, not having belonged, like Peter, to the number of the Apostles of Jesus, was not so much influenced by his free spirit. As regards the conditions of the agreement, the two accounts differ. According to Paul, they were simply, first, that the sphere of his Heathen mission and that of the Jewish mission of the other Apostles should in future also remain separate; secondly, that Paul should remember the poor of the churches of Judea, that is, should collect charitable gifts for them amongst the Heathen.<sup>1</sup> The Acts of the Apostles is silent as to these two

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. ii. 9, 10.

points, and states instead that in a formal resolution of the Church the obligation was imposed on the Heathen Christians of abstaining from meat offered to idols, from fornication, from blood, and from things strangled.<sup>1</sup> •

This difference between the two accounts has been made the subject of much debate, to enter upon which in detail would on this occasion occupy too much of our time: I must confine myself to the following observations. As Paul does not mention in any way these four obligations imposed on the Gentiles, but, on the contrary, asserts that nothing was required of him by those of reputation, save that he should remember the poor, and as subsequently, in speaking of the eating of flesh offered to idols, he does not even distantly allude to a resolution of the Apostles bearing upon it, the doubt as to the historical character of the resolution is probably well founded. However, it does not by any means follow from this supposition that the author of the Acts arbitrarily invented his narrative,

---

<sup>1</sup> Acts xv. 20, 28, 29.

and with a definite dogmatic purpose. We must, on the contrary, keep in view the fact that the four conditions of James correspond substantially to the obligations which were at that time generally imposed on the Proselytes of the Gate. When, therefore, we remember that the first Heathen Christians were for the most part from the Proselytes of the Gate, the conjecture naturally presents itself that those Proselytes will as Christians have continued their former manner of life, and that accordingly the observance of the Proselytes' commands must from the first have become the standing practice of the Gentile Christians in certain churches. We need not think it at all surprising or objectionable that a practice of this kind, which had of itself grown up, should in the tradition of the Church be referred to a special apostolic regulation, and that it should be placed *bonâ fide* by the author of the Acts in direct connection with the Apostolic Council. However, the further possibility appears to me not altogether out of the question, namely, that after an agreement had been come to in Jerusalem as to the chief matter, the other points were subsequently discussed, in some

such way as this—that on the Jewish side the expectation was expressed, and on the other side the promise given, that the Gentile Christians should continue as before to observe the Proselytes' commands, in order that no offence might be given to the consciences of the Jews in the Diaspora. Such a subsidiary agreement, which followed almost as a matter of course, Paul might very well all along ignore, while the author of the Acts was acquainted with it through the traditions of the church at Antioch, and looked upon it as the principal matter of the contract, inasmuch as he possessed no particular information about the more personal arrangements come to between Paul and the First Church. In this way a reconciliation of the two accounts may be conceived as at all events not impossible. Moreover, I am of opinion that this question has not in reality the great importance which is often attached to it; for whether the removal of this special difference is thought to be possible or not, appears to me to be of quite secondary moment in view of the unquestionable fact, that with regard to the real meaning and object of the Apostles' agreement the accounts of

Paul and of the Acts conduct to essentially unanimous results.

I find those results in the following three points :  
1. The freedom of Gentile Christians from the Jewish Law was conceded. 2. The continuance of the validity of that Law in the case of Jewish Christians was pre-supposed as a matter of course. 3. The restrictive conditions of the agreement were meant in the minds of the Jewish Christians to protect the legal position of Jewish Christianity from all the dangers which threatened it from contact with Heathen Christians, and to assimilate the relation of Heathen to Jewish Christians to that of Proselytes to Jews, or of partial members to full members of the kingdom of God. With the first and most important point Paul had gained the essential object of his journey : the question as to the right of Heathen Christianity to exist without an acknowledgment of the Law had been decided in the affirmative by the paren' church and its chief men. With that decision faith in the Messiah Jesus was acknowledged as constituting a new common religious life, superior to the distinction of Jew and Gentile ;

Christianity was accordingly placed as a new religion upon a footing of its own, and definitely distinguished from Judaism, with which it had hitherto been amalgamated as a smaller society or sect. This was at all events an attainment of great moment which could never be again wholly lost; the foundation for the edifice of the universal Christian Church had then been laid, the universalistic Christian faith of Paul, in conjunction with the practical large-heartedness of Peter, had victoriously held the field and overcome Jewish particularism. Yet it was undoubtedly a long way from this point to the complete union of both parties in one Church. Though they were associated by the ideal bond of their common faith in Christ, they continued to be divided as before by the remaining wall of separation created by the Mosaic Law. For the conclusion which appears to us so obvious—that if the Law is not binding on Gentile Christians it must cease to be binding on Jewish Christians—was quite foreign to the mind of the parent church, including its chief men, not only at the Apostolic Council, but afterwards. This is one of the most indubitable and also,

for the history of early Christianity, one of the most important facts. It is only by means of it that the division in the spheres of missionary labour between Paul and Peter can be properly understood: that division was the natural consequence of the obligation still resting on the first Apostles to observe the Jewish Law, which rendered missionary labours amongst the Gentiles impossible in their case, on account of the unavoidable observance of the laws regarding purification; that division was also meant to serve as a guarantee for the protection of the legal position of the Jewish Christians against the seductive influence of the anti-legal procedure of the Pauline mission. It is only by means of this fact that the vacillating conduct of Peter at Antioch, the action and the success of the emissaries of James in that city, and the entire subsequent contest of the Judaists against Paul generally, can be understood. Finally, we have direct evidence in the words of James himself, when, Acts xxi. 21, he expressly speaks of the Jewish Christians as men "zealous for the Law," and represents the charge made against Paul, of seducing the Jews to renounce

the Law of Moses, as an incredible aspersion. All these facts point concordantly to the conclusion, that in the First Church the Pauline conviction,—that faith in Christ was in principle irreconcilable with the religion of the Law, and that Christ was therefore the end of the Law for *all* Christians, Jews as well as Gentiles,—was after the Apostolic Council still as far as ever from having been reached. The concession which was made in the Council to the Heathen Christians was, therefore, not the result of a clear dogmatic perception of the unimportance of the Jewish Law for the Christian Church, but it had only been forced from the Jewish conscience by the overawing impression produced by Paul and the actual results of his work, in which it was impossible not to see a divine vindication of the rights of the Heathen Christians. But the First Church had not at the Council any idea that further inferences in the sense of the Pauline freedom from the Law must or might be drawn from that concession. And we regard this shortsightedness on its part as so far fortunate, as without it the acknowledgment of Heathen Christianity, with its freedom



from the Law, would hardly have been ever brought about.

But it was just in this want of clearness and consistency that the weakness of the Apostolic agreement lay. It was a treaty of peace in which were hidden the germs of fresh dissensions. It aimed at effecting an external co-existence, side by side, of a Gentile Christianity independent of the Law and a Jewish Christianity loyal to the Law; but how could this division be carried out in mixed churches like that at Antioch? Under it, how could any intercourse between the two sections of a church, a united religious service, a common solemnization of the Lord's Supper, or generally any united church life, exist? If, therefore, the Christian consciousness of fraternal union nevertheless imperatively demanded such a church life, one of the two divisions would be obliged of necessity to accommodate itself to the other, and accordingly either the Heathen brethren would be compelled to live under the Law or the Jewish brethren to live without it. But then freedom from the Law had only just been accorded to the Heathen;

what was therefore more natural than that the Jewish Christians of Antioch should now, in the interests of the harmony of the church, participate more largely in the freedom of their Gentile brethren? The church at Antioch was thus on the way to successfully realize, under the eyes of its leaders, Paul and Barnabas, Christian freedom to an extent far outstripping the intention of the Apostolic agreement.

But how was this course which things were taking regarded in Jerusalem? At this point we are again met by the characteristic difference between Peter and James. The former did not hesitate to pay a visit to the liberal-minded church at Antioch, and with the inoffensive large-heartedness of his sanguine temperament to conform to its liberal practices. It was otherwise with James: he beheld in the freedom prevalent in Antioch a flagrant violation of the conditions of the agreement come to at Jerusalem, a disavowal of things sacred to the Jewish conscience, a lowering of the Righteous to the level of Heathen Sinners, a profanation of faith in the Messiah. And probably the majority

in Jerusalem were of his way of thinking. Consequently a few started from that capital with a view of checking those free proceedings in Antioch, and particularly of whetting the edge of Peter's Jewish conscience. Their arrival produced a paralyzing effect on the more liberal and advanced spirit of the Antiochians; opposition to them was not ventured upon, their stricter principles were submitted to in timid embarrassment. Peter first of all withdrew from the Gentile Christians, with whom he had previously kept up an inoffensive fellowship at their tables; his example was soon followed by the other Jewish Christians, Barnabas even suffering himself to be carried away by the reactionary wave; indeed, the new scrupulous spirit had such an infectious influence that Heathen Christians felt themselves under a certain moral pressure, and appeared inclined to submit to the Jewish customs. Thereupon Paul could restrain himself no longer: with all the keen severity characteristic of him when questions of religious principle were at stake, he opposed Peter, and charged him plainly with dissembling, because he was not only himself renounc-

ing, but causing others to renounce, the freer principles which had only just before been in practice acknowledged as valid.<sup>1</sup> That charge of "dissembling" is quite intelligible from the subjective standpoint of Paul, who on questions of religious principle tolerated no want of consistency and thoroughness; but looked at objectively, it was obviously too severe, for it presupposes that Peter had, against his conscience and better knowledge, renounced a clearly recognized conviction, whilst he had really at that time never had such with regard to this question of the Law. The failing of Peter was in fact not any moral weakness of character, but defective clearness of view on a religious matter, which naturally involved as its consequence indecision in action. Paul himself proves this by the fact that in censuring Peter he does not attack any such moral defect as fickleness or fear of man, but by a dogmatic line of argument exposes the inconsistency of the Jewish standpoint. If the adherents of the Law had charged the freer

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. ii. 13.

Jewish Christians with having put themselves on the same level with Gentile sinners, and with having thereby lowered Christ to the place of a servant of sin, Paul replies to them, that, quite the reverse, it was they who had done both the Law and Christ wrong, in seeking to associate them together, instead of perceiving that the believing Christian has died with Christ to the Law, that he may henceforth live only to God. The Judaists are accordingly not, as they themselves imagine, the better Christians and full members of the Messianic kingdom, but, on the contrary, according to Paul's conviction, not true Christians at all as yet, because by their obdurate adherence to the Law they frustrate the divine purpose of the crucifixion of Christ, and "make void the grace of Christ; for if righteousness comes through the Law, Christ died for nought."<sup>1</sup>

By this line of argument Paul exposed with merciless logic the inconsistency of the Judaistic standpoint, the intrinsic incompatibility of the

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. ii. 21. \*

association of faith in Christ with Jewish legalism, and showed that his position of freedom from the Law was not merely to be tolerated, but was the only truly Christian position. But Jewish Christianity was unable to follow him to this conclusion; from this time, therefore, it held aloof from Paul in timid distrust. And as a violation of the conditions of the agreement at Jerusalem was discovered in his consistent abrogation of the Law, that agreement was no longer considered by the Jewish Christians as binding on them, and a course of opposition to the Apostle was commenced within his own Gentile Christian churches. How far the original Apostles personally may have taken part in it is hard to say, since on this point we have no definite information to go upon. When, however, we consider that the Judaizing agitators appealed to the honoured names of the first Apostles, and accredited themselves to the Gentile churches by the production of letters of introduction, which they had undoubtedly brought with them from Palestine, it is hardly conceivable that their action should have been wholly unshared by the first Apostles. • Moreover, had that been the

case, the tone of irritation in which Paul speaks more than once of "those of repute," the "pillars" and "pre-eminent Apostles," and emphasizes his independence and equality in relation to them, would be hardly intelligible. Still, it must be considered, on the other hand, that in dealing with the parties in Corinth, Paul refrains from all polemical allusion to Peter, whose name one party had made its watchword, that he nowhere attacks the authority of the earlier Apostles, but, on the contrary, acknowledges the priority in time of their apostleship, and calls himself the least of the Apostles, who was not worthy to be called an Apostle, because he persecuted the Church, but who had through the grace of God laboured more than all the rest.<sup>1</sup> The parent church, too, is mentioned in a kindly manner by Paul shortly before his last journey to Jerusalem,<sup>2</sup> the Heathen Christians being described as debtors to the poor saints at Jerusalem: it is true that in the same connection he intimates that he has a slight doubt whether

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 9 sq.

• <sup>2</sup> Rom. xv. 27.

he and his gift will find a kindly reception in Jerusalem. That this doubt was by no means without foundation is proved by the disastrous issue of his visit, when the Jewish Christian brethren appear, at all events, not to have shown to the sorely pressed Apostle to the Heathen earnest sympathy or active assistance. If we take these various indications into consideration, we may probably conclude that the relation of Paul to the parent church was that of a cool, reserved respect, not unmixed with mistrust and irritation. This becomes the more intelligible if we may suppose that, as previously at the Apostolic Council, so subsequently, two tendencies of thought existed within the parent church itself—the more liberal and tolerant represented by Peter, and the more rigid and exclusive represented by James. Although the latter tendency may, after the occurrence in Antioch, have gained generally the upper-hand in Jerusalem, the conciliatory influence of a Peter would nevertheless prevent a complete severance of all relations, and Paul might therefore still continue to cherish the hope of being able,



by his personal appearance with the offering of the rich contributions of the Gentile world, to change the feeling of the church of Jerusalem in his favour.

If we now proceed to take a glance at the subsequent phases of this conflict between Paul and Judaism, we must in the first instance direct our attention to the events taking place in *Galatia*. On his second visit to the churches there Paul found their condition had altered much for the worse. Judaizers had appeared in their midst, who had undoubtedly come from elsewhere, from Antioch or Jerusalem, throwing the Heathen Christian churches into commotion and confusion, and representing to them that the adoption of the Jewish Law, at all events of circumcision and the fasts, was the indispensable condition of full Christian salvation. And in so doing they appealed to the authority of the first Apostles and of Barnabas, who had been one of the founders of the churches in Galatia, and, on the other hand, sought to lower that of Paul, describing him as only a disciple of the Apostles, and even throwing doubt on his personal honour. By appearing in person, Paul hoped to allay the

storm of Jewish reaction which had been conjured up; but no sooner had he taken his departure than the hostile intrigues assumed a still more threatening shape. On receiving information of this, Paul wrote his Epistle to the Galatians, that marvellous attestation of Christian liberty, that monument of a religious genius who was many centuries in advance of his age.

He defends in the first instance the independence of his Apostolic authority: he was not called by men to be an Apostle, nor by human tradition did he learn his gospel, but by the immediate revelation of Jesus Christ. To the Jewish principle of authority and tradition he thus places in opposition the evangelical principle of the immediate assurance of divine truth felt in the soul through mysterious contact with the Divine Spirit, which bears within itself the seal of its truth. And this very same experience of an inward revelation of the spirit, wherein lay the source of his knowledge of the gospel, he presupposes as existing also in his readers, and to it he appeals as the supreme rule and test of all religious truth.<sup>1</sup> "This only would I learn from

you, Received ye the spirit from works of Law or from the preaching of faith? He therefore that supplied to you the spirit and worketh powers in you, doeth he that by works of Law or by the preaching of faith?" But as the true divine revelation within the soul can never be opposed to the divine revelation in history, Paul immediately adds to the appeal to the Christian consciousness of the Galatians a proof in confirmation from the history of Abraham: inasmuch as faith was counted to Abraham for righteousness, believers are the true children of Abraham; and since in Abraham all Heathen nations are to be blessed, believing Heathen are the true heirs of Abraham's promise. (Paul finds the same truth confirmed also by the fact that the promise was made to "Abraham and his seed," for by this word "seed" in the singular only Christ can be intended.<sup>2</sup> Surprising as the line of argument appears at first sight, the strangeness of it is lessened when we consider that in Paul's view Christ was not a mere individual like

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. iii. 2, 4.

<sup>2</sup> Gal. iii. 16.

others, but the archetypal Head of the sons of God generally, and thereby the *one* representative of all those for whom the divine promises of grace are intended.) However, his Jewish opponents could object to all this, that really the Law was added to the promise as the condition of sharing the blessing of Abraham, and that therefore faith in Christ would not of itself suffice, but needed to be supplemented by the works of the Law. This objection, in which the vital point of the Jewish Christian position was found, Paul refuted by a double line of argument. He proved first, from the essential relation of law to promise, that they were opposed to each other as mutually exclusive principles, the meritorious *deed* of man and the retributive judgment—the *curse* of God, answering to the Law, and, on the other hand, the *faith* of man without desert and the gift of grace—the *blessing* of God, answering to the promise. He proved next, from the historical relation of the Law to the promise, that it could not form a restrictive condition to the latter; for as a limiting clause may not be added to a valid covenant, so the Law which came in 430 years after,

cannot be intended as such a clause, by which God's covenant of promise with Abraham would lose its original character of a gift of grace. Moreover, the promise, he continues, was given directly by God alone, but the Law only indirectly, that is, by the mediation of angels and Moses, a circumstance likewise indicating the subordinate importance of the latter in comparison with the former. But how can that be? Shall the Law contradict the promise? Paul foresees this objection on the part of his opponents, but he at once parries it by showing that the Law was simply designed to be an instrument to prepare for the fulfilment of the promise, for the very reason that it was unable itself to give life; it was intended to keep men under the captivity of sin until the promise of blessing should be fulfilled by faith in Christ in the case of the spiritual children of Abraham.<sup>1</sup>

With this Paul has defended victoriously his principle of faith against the Galatian Judaizers. He does not stop there, however; but, as in the

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. iii. 19—25.

contention with Peter in Antioch, passes from the defence to the attack. If his opponents supposed that the Christianity of the Gentiles was complete only when the works of the Law, circumcision, observance of fasts and the like, had been added to faith in Christ, Paul called on them to consider that this supposed completion was, on the contrary, but a lamentable relapse from the religion of the spirit and the truth into that of the flesh, into the service of the miserable and weak elements of nature. He places therefore the ceremonies of the Mosaic Law point-blank upon an equality with those of the Heathen religions, putting both into the common category of nature-worship, with its sense-limitations and absence of spirit and power.<sup>1</sup> He thereby pronounces freedom from the Jewish Law not simply a thing permissible to the Christian, but positively a Christian duty, which the Christian may not surrender, unless he means to lose Christ and fall from grace. "For freedom Christ has set us free; stand fast therefore, and be not

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. iv. 3, 8 sq.

entangled again in a yoke of bondage.”<sup>1</sup> To be circumcised or uncircumcised is of no importance to the Christian, but faith alone which worketh by love; in that is he a new creature; the world has been crucified unto him, the old bondage to the elements of the world has been ended, and its place is taken by the voluntary bondage of the Christian spirit, which addresses God, “Abba, dear Father,” and brings the true fulfilment of the Law in self-sacrificing love of the brethren.<sup>2</sup>

The superiority of Christianity to all pre-Christian forms of religion has never been more clearly or grandly declared than is here done by Paul. But that very declaration of superiority involved the magnifying of the difference between it and Judaism into a complete antagonism, into an irrevocable breach. And Paul did not for a moment shrink from drawing this necessary inference. For in a remarkable allegorical interpretation of the narrative of Sarah and Hagar and their two sons,<sup>3</sup> he

---

<sup>1</sup> Gal. v. 1 sq.

<sup>2</sup> Gal. v. 6, 13, vi. 14, 15.

<sup>3</sup> Gal. iv. 21—31.

pronounces the Heathen Christians in their freedom from the Law the only true sons of the free mother, the legitimate heirs of the promise according to Isaac; but the legal Jerusalem he describes, on the contrary, as the son of the bond-woman, who may not inherit with the son of the free woman. According to this view, the Gentile Christians are no longer merely the tolerated sharers of the promises of Abraham, but they are the only legitimate heirs, who must take the place of the children of Abraham by natural descent. Accordingly, the pride and consolation of the Jew, that the ancient promises of God belong to his nation, are brought to nought; he may no more have any advantage above the despised Heathen nations; the Law, too, in which he found his highest glory, has been deprived of its value, has been placed on a par with Heathen forms of worship; everything to which the heart of a Jew had for five centuries tenaciously and jealously clung, has been wrested from him and broken up and cast before his feet as a worthless gewgaw. Naturally all Jews and all of the Jewish way of thinking



were indignant at this. We are therefore not surprised to find the daring Apostle to the Heathen ever after persecuted wherever he went by his Judaistic opponents. Still, Paul himself subsequently modified this sternly unconciliatory attitude towards Judaism, as presented in the Epistle to the Galatians, and sought by a more considerate and conciliatory attitude again to pacify Jewish feeling.

Before that could be done, however, Paul had once more to wage a battle with the same Judaistic opponents, a battle which was the more severe as those opponents met him on the new field with fresh and keener weapons. In the church at Corinth, teachers of Jewish race had appeared from the outside, professing to be "Christ's servants and Apostles," and this in such a pre-eminent sense, that they employed against Paul as a party cry the claim "to be Christ's."<sup>1</sup> These people wished to bring to the Corinthian Christians another Jesus, another Spirit, and another Gospel than they had received from Paul;

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. i. 12: Χριστοῦ εἶναι; comp. 2 Cor. x. 7.

and they appear, with this claim to be the bearers of a more excellent Christianity, to have soon obtained in Corinth such a footing as to have in the highest degree astonished and incensed Paul, because he then felt the ground giving way under his feet in the chief city of Greece even. They were the old opponents again, and it was therefore naturally the old quarrel which re-appeared in this disturbance in Corinth. But the method of warfare was different, and the immediate points of attack had been more skilfully selected than in Galatia. These Corinthian agitators did not disturb the pleasure-loving and enlightened Greeks with the requirement of circumcision and other Jewish ceremonial observances, but they directed their assault this time immediately against the very centre of the Pauline Gospel. Paul, they said to the Corinthians, had not preached to them the true Christ, whom he, in fact, did not himself know, as he had never seen or heard him; they, on the other hand, who had themselves seen and heard Jesus, and had had personal intercourse with him and his immediate disciples, could preach to them

the true Jesus and the only true gospel of the Messianic kingdom.<sup>1</sup> In contrast with the Pauline Christ, the Son of God according to the spirit, they set up "Christ according to the flesh," as Paul says, that is, the Jesus of history<sup>4</sup> as present to the memory of the First Church, and according to his outward appearance a Jew loyal to the Law. Accordingly their gospel of the Messianic kingdom was also another than Paul's: not the gospel of the spirit which quickeneth, but of the letter which killeth; or, when they did speak of a "spirit," it was not the spirit of the new covenant, the radiant glory of which had been revealed in the soul of Paul, but the spirit of the old covenant, the glory of which was transient, the spirit of Moses, which is the servile spirit of fear. To "enslave" the Corinthian Christians under this rigid Jewish spirit had therefore been the object of the Judaizers in this case also; only the way to this object was different from that taken previously in Galatia; it was no longer the direct authority of Moses and

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. xi. 4.

Jewish tradition which was brought into the field against the free and spiritual gospel of Paul, but in the first instance that of Jesus and primitive Apostolic tradition.

The situation of Paul was thereby rendered still more perilous; for to a superficial judgment, such as that of most men ordinarily is, the weakness of his authority lay undoubtedly in the circumstance that he had not been a disciple of the historical Jesus, and was not able to base his Apostolic call upon a fact that could be outwardly perceived and acknowledged. The fight about the question of the principle of Paul's gospel assumed therefore in this case the form of a personal struggle as to the legitimacy of Paul's Apostleship. And this struggle became for Paul the more dangerous as his enemies did not shrink from the most offensive means of humiliating and discrediting him. As, in order not to be burdensome to the Church, he had foregone all claim to support and had earned his livelihood by the labour of his hands, his opponents discovered therein an implicit admission on his part that he had no right to come forward as an Apostle and to

make an Apostle's claims on the Church.<sup>1</sup> When he zealously collected the charitable offerings for the poor church at Jerusalem, they laid against him the base charge of seeking to obtain by stealthy methods what he did not dare to attempt openly, and of filling his own pockets at the expense of the Corinthians.<sup>2</sup> When he appealed to his deepest and most secret experiences, to his sight of Jesus as the glorified Lord from heaven, to his other "revelations and visions" in which he was caught away into the third heaven, he was pronounced out of his mind, and said to be always boasting of himself.<sup>3</sup> Indeed, even the endless afflictions which he had to endure for the Gospel's sake, seem to have been interpreted to his disadvantage as a mark of divine disfavour.<sup>4</sup> Is it to be wondered at that, in view of such malicious attacks, the feelings of Paul should have been passionately stirred, that he should call

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. ix.; 2 Cor. xi. 7 sq., xii. 13.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. xii. 16 sq., viii. 20, 21.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Cor. v. 13, xii. 1—13.

<sup>4</sup> 2 Cor. i. 5 sq., iv. 7 sq., vi. 4 sq., xi. 23 sq.

his opponents "lying Apostles" and "servants of Satan," who only fashion themselves as servants of righteousness?<sup>1</sup> It was to him a question of life or death, and his situation was an extremely difficult one. What had he to oppose to the weapons of his opponents? No testimonials from human authorities, no letters of commendation from Jerusalem; nothing but the testimony of his conscience and the letter of commendation furnished him by God himself, an epistle supplied in the actual results of his work, in the very existence of the Corinthian church.<sup>2</sup> "Our glorying is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in holiness and sincerity of God, not in fleshly wisdom but in the grace of God, we behaved ourselves in the world, and more abundantly to you-ward;" "Our epistle are ye, written in our hearts, known and read of all men;" "In everything commending ourselves as the servants of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in long suffering and kindness, in holy spirit, in love unfeigned, in the word of

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. xi. 13, 14. •

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. i. 12, iii. 2, vi. 4 sq.

truth, in the power of God, by the weapons of righteousness, defensive and offensive, by honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report, as deceivers and yet true, as unknown and yet known, as dying, and, behold, we live, as chastened and yet not killed, as sorrowful but alway rejoicing, as poor yet making many rich, as having nothing and yet possessing all things! O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, our heart is enlarged, but ye are straitened in your own heart—I speak as to my children—do ye the same to me, and be ye also enlarged!”

And such affectionate entreaty and admonition the Corinthians could not in truth resist. While he was on the way to Corinth, Paul received through Titus, whom he had sent on before him, the most assuring reports of a happy turn in the feeling of the majority of the church, who were seeking by redoubled zeal to atone for the wrong which they had done the beloved Apostle. And we may infer with great probability from the tone and feeling of the *Epistle to the Romans*, which was being written during this stay in Corinth, that his

appearance there immediately afterwards smoothed the agitated waves of party strife at last, that a mutual approach and reconciliation of the contending interests was initiated, which exercised also a certain reactive effect on the feeling of the Apostle himself and his way of looking at things. The Epistle to the Romans is distinguished from all the other Epistles of the Apostle's by its calm and objective character and decidedly conciliatory purpose, the reason of which must be sought partly in the mood of the writer at the time, and partly in the peculiar circumstances of the church in Rome.

That church had not been founded by Paul, and had not, down to that time, stood in any personal relation to him; nor, according to all appearances, were there any anti-Pauline agitators in it; in its tone, of thought the church was generally rather inclined towards the Apostle of the Heathen than against him, for he repeatedly acknowledges its condition to have been praiseworthy.<sup>1</sup> But it was composed of Jews and Gentiles, and the mutual

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. i. 8—12, vi. 17, xv. 14.



relations of these two sections were evidently so strained that its healthy development was daily placed in greater peril, and the more so as through the rapid growth of the Heathen section, the Jewish, which had undoubtedly formed the principal original element, sunk into the position of a powerless minority. The arrogance of many Roman Gentile Christians, their offensive want of consideration for their despised Jewish brethren, together with their heathenish frivolity in moral conduct, was naturally but little adapted to reconcile the Jewish Christian section to a turn of things which was to them so puzzling and incomprehensible. This growingly Gentile Messianic kingdom was as contrary to their Jewish hopes as it was to their strictly legal principles of life. Having been thus grieved and deceived in their most sacred relations, probably not a few may have withdrawn offended from their Gentile brethren and returned to the Synagogue, so that the unity of the church was in serious danger of being broken up. Such a condition of the Roman church is implied, I believe, in the Epistle to the Romans itself,

when we duly consider all the hints it contains. It is not my business to place before you on this occasion the rich contents of this Epistle, as to do that I should have to re-state the whole doctrinal system of the Apostle which occupied us in the last Lecture. Allow me to direct your special attention further only to those points in which Paul has distinctly qualified his anti-Judaistic position in the interests of a peaceful reconciliation with the Jewish-Christian habit of thought, thereby preparing for the development of a common Catholic form of doctrine.

In general, the endeavour, which appears in this Epistle much more decidedly than before, to connect the Pauline Gospel with the Old Testament and to show that it is a fulfilment of prophecy,<sup>1</sup> is of itself worthy of remark. Coming to details, the modification may be observed in the three main articles of Paul's previous controversies—his doctrine of Christ, of the Law, and of the hope of Israel. In opposition to the Corinthian "Christ party," Paul had laid great stress on the idealism of his Christology :

---

<sup>1</sup> E.g. Rom. i. 2, 17, iii. 21, 31, iv. 1—25, vii. 1, ix. 6, 25—29, 33, x. 5—21, xiii. 9, xv. 8—12.

“The Lord is the Spirit; although we had known Christ after the flesh, henceforth we know him no more (that is, in that way).” Subsequently, after closer intercourse with the moderate Jewish Christians (the Petrine section), he may have arrived at the conviction that the historical realism which attaches importance to the terrestrial personality of Jesus has after all a legitimate side, and he may have felt this the more readily as by it a salutary counterpoise was supplied to the spiritual transcendentalism of the followers of Apollos. In the Epistle to the Romans we find him, accordingly, now combining this historic and realistic way of regarding things with his own idealistic tendencies in such a manner as to put the former into the foreground, making it heighten by contrast the effect of the latter: thus by the flesh Christ is undoubtedly the son of David, but by the spirit of holiness the Son of God; by the flesh he sprang from the Fathers of Israel and belongs therefore peculiarly to the Jewish nation, but at the same time he is the Divine Lord who is above all, whether Jews or Heathen.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. i. 3, 4, ix. 5, xv. 8.

Further, as regards the Law, in the Epistle to the Galatians Paul had placed it, as far as its ritualistic portions were concerned, on a level with Heathen nature-worship, and had summarily denominated the legal system a "curse," in antithesis to the spirit of Christ. But now he energetically protests against the idea that he deems the Law itself carnal and impure, or a principle of sin; on the contrary, he regards it as in itself spiritual and holy, righteous and good, and the cause of its disastrous effects lies simply in the carnal nature of man.<sup>1</sup> Nor does he now go so far as to pronounce adherence to the laws regarding feast-days and food nothing less than a falling away from Christ, as he had done in the Epistle to the Galatians, but concedes that the legally scrupulous, or "the weak," may observe their abstentions and practices to the Lord; he pronounces such things, therefore, *adiaphora*, with regard to which every one may consult his own conscience, and not in themselves reprehensible and unchristian; indeed, he makes it quite a duty on the part of

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. vii. 7—14, viii. 3.

those of freer views, or "the strong," to observe an indulgent and kind consideration and tolerance towards the weak.<sup>1</sup> This remarkable change may find its explanation in two causes: first, in the circumstances of the Roman church, in which just then the legalists no longer played the part of assailants and oppressors, but of the assailed and oppressed; next, probably in the personal experiences of Paul at Corinth, where he could not avoid perceiving that the legal way of thinking followed by the moderate Jewish Christians really had a very healthy side worthy of all consideration, whilst the Gentile-Christian freedom from the Law in many instances sunk in moral worth in proportion as, in an arrogant over-estimate of its own importance, it boasted of its advanced illumination. The traces of experiences of this kind may be plainly perceived in the practical admonitions of the Epistle to the Romans, which supply us not merely with guidance for the understanding of the state of the church at Rome, but also give us acceptable information as regards

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xiv. and xv.

the state of things which had arisen in Corinth after Paul's last arrival there: these traces show a reaction amongst the extreme parties, an internal approximation of the disciples of Peter and of Paul to a standpoint of general church union.

This irenic tendency, finally, may be observed most distinctly in the case of the third of the Apostle's former standpoints. In the Epistle to the Galatians Paul had gone so far as to declare the children of Abraham by natural descent—that is, the people of Israel—outcast, the disinherited children of the bondwoman, and that by the spiritual children of Abraham from the free woman—that is, the believing Heathen—who are alone legitimate heirs. And this harsh utterance appeared from year to year to be more and more terribly confirmed by the actual results of his mission, which gave a severe shock to the Jewish Christians, who could not easily forget that the Messiah Jesus had himself sprung from Israel, and that it was Israel's promises which must be fulfilled in his kingdom. And Paul was the less able to deny the justice of this doubt, inasmuch as he himself painfully shared

the patriotic grief at the unbelief of Israel. In the discussion of this point (Rom. ix.) he accordingly strikes quite another key than that of the Epistle to the Galatians. He assures the disheartened Jewish Christians in Rome of his intense sympathy with his own people, to whom belong the adoption and the glory and the covenants and the giving of the Law, and the service of God and the promises, whose are the Fathers, and of whom Christ came according to the flesh. On that account God's word of promise to this people cannot have wholly come to nought. "God hath not cast off his people which he foreknew," Paul says now, and thereby directly retracts the hard utterance about the "casting out" of the children of Abraham by natural descent.<sup>1</sup> Israel has stumbled indeed at the stone of offence, the cross of Christ and righteousness by faith, yet not that it might fall and remain fallen for ever, but only that it might make possible the entrance of the Heathen into the Messianic kingdom; and when Israel's loss has brought about

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xi. 2; comp. Gal. iv. 30.

the riches of the Gentiles, then the fulness of the Gentiles will in return provoke Israel to emulation. Israel's present unbelief does not therefore mean its final rejection by God, but only its temporary putting back, in order to promote God's plan of universal salvation, which will find its ultimate end in the reception of all into the Divine favour. True, the first have become last and the last first; the natural branches of the olive of Israel have been cut out to make room for the wild offshoot of the Heathen; but the latter may not on that account glory unfeelingly over Israel, but must remember that God can also cut them out again and graft Israel in once more.<sup>1</sup> Thus the Pauline universalism, which seemed at first only to turn against Israel, in this Epistle undergoes a change in favour of Israel: the object of it was to console and encourage those who had been put back, to humble and warn those who had been put first, and thus to unite all alike in the brotherly unity of the new Church of the all-embracing kingdom of God, in which there is

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xi. 18—24.



no more Jew or Greek. This was the ripest fruit of the conflicts between the Apostle to the Gentiles and the Jewish Christians ; and this was at the same time the testament which Paul left to the nascent Universal Church.

**LECTURE IV.**

**THE RECONCILIATION OF PAULINISM AND JEWISH  
CHRISTIANITY.**



## LECTURE IV.

### THE RECONCILIATION OF PAULINISM AND JEWISH CHRISTIANITY.

---

IN the last Lecture I endeavoured to put before you a sketch of the conflicts of the Apostle Paul with Jewish Christianity. We saw how they took their rise in the occurrences at Antioch, reached their climax in the proceedings of the Galatian and Corinthian churches, and how, after the victory over the Corinthian opponents, the intense strain in the relations of the parties gave place to that milder tone and conciliatory bearing of which the Epistle to the Romans supplies evidence. And the continuance of this pacific tone of feeling at the time of the Roman imprisonment of the Apostle can be gathered from the *Epistle to the Philippians*, which was written from Rome. Paul has, it is true, to

complain in this Epistle also of personal opponents,<sup>1</sup> who preach Christ, of envy and strife, with secret motives of ill-will against him; but he nevertheless allows, in the case of these opponents, that they really preach Christ, and he even rejoices at their work, because it serves, after all, the common cause. How very unlike his severe condemnation of those Galatian and Corinthian opponents, who proclaimed another Jesus and another gospel than his, is this mild, tolerant tone! But the question rises: "Is this change of judgment to be traced solely to the personal feeling of the Apostle, and not also to the circumstance that the Jewish Christians as a fact no longer put another Jesus in opposition to the Pauline Christ, but on this central point of his gospel drew nearer to him, learnt from him, and agreed with him?" The very tone of the Epistles to the Romans and the Philip-  
pians suggests the conjecture that on Roman soil a softening of the differences and the initiation of a conciliatory movement had from the first taken

---

<sup>1</sup> Phil. i. 15—18.

place. And a confirmation of this conjecture may be found, as it seems to me, in that book of the New Testament which was the first from the Jewish Christian side and written only a few years after the Apostle to the Gentiles had left the scene of his earthly labours. I refer to the *Apocalypse of John*.

It is now pretty generally acknowledged that the date of this book is the year 68-69 A.D.; but I cannot consider it probable that the Apostle John, as is still commonly supposed, was its author. It is not merely that the writer nowhere calls himself an "Apostle," but he speaks<sup>1</sup> of the twelve Apostles with such objectivity that he cannot well himself be of their number; indeed, he appears to pre-suppose their death as already an accomplished fact.<sup>2</sup> There is, further, the special consideration that the description of the judgment upon the city of Rome, Rev. xviii., decidedly produces the impression that it is an *eye-witness* of the reign of terror in the days of the Neronian conflagration and the following persecution of the Christians who is speaking. For these reasons I consider it in the highest degree

---

<sup>1</sup> Rev. xxi. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. xviii. 20.

probable that the author of the Apocalypse was a Jewish Christian of Rome, who had come into Asia Minor, perhaps in his flight from the Neronian persecution (A.D. 64), had made the acquaintance of the churches there, and now, when the fall of Jerusalem was approaching, turned his prophetic eye both in that direction and also towards Rome, so that the burning recollection of the days of terror in Rome under Nero became in his mind the symbol of the coming judgment upon the proud and sinful Babylon. If this supposition is, as I do not doubt, correct, it follows from it that the author of the Apocalypse must, as a member of the church of Rome during the years 62—64, have had personal relations with the Apostle Paul; and inasmuch as a man so eminent as the author of the Apocalypse in any case was, will certainly have played a prominent part as a leader of his party, we have every reason for supposing that he occupied a place in the front rank of those Jewish Christians in Rome of whom Paul, partly complaining of and partly acknowledging them, gives his opinion in the Epistle to the Philippians. Paul there brings the charge against his opponents that

their Christian labours are not free from envy, from secret selfish intentions and ill-will towards himself; indeed, that they even seek to render his situation still worse and more painful than it is.<sup>1</sup> And no doubt they did this by making his principle of freedom from the Law, and with it himself, responsible for the moral excesses of the Heathen Christians, a representation which naturally produced a prejudicial influence upon the course of his trial. At the same time, he acknowledges with rejoicing that, in spite of all this, these opponents really preach Christ, who must have been, therefore, the Christ of his gospel, that Lord who is the spirit, and not merely a "Christ according to the flesh," such as the Corinthian Judaists had put forward in opposition to the Pauline Christ according to the spirit. Paul therefore recognizes a spiritual faith in Christ as the uniting bond between himself and his Roman opponents, whilst all along their envy at his success, their suspicion of his principle of freedom from the Law—in a word, their Judaic prejudices and intrigues against himself—continued to exist.

---

<sup>1</sup> Phil. i. 15—18.



When we inspect more closely the relation of the author of the Apocalypse to Paul, we meet with essentially the same features as were presented by the Apostle's Roman opponents. It is especially clear that the author is personally not favourably disposed towards Paul. He beholds,<sup>1</sup> written on the foundation-walls of the new Jerusalem, the names of the twelve Apostles, the representatives of the twelve tribes of Israel; for the Apostle of the Gentiles there is no room. In fact, whether he recognizes him as an Apostle at all, is left in ambiguous obscurity. The language used to the church at Ephesus suggests the conclusion that he did not. It is true that when this church is commended<sup>2</sup> because it could not bear those which were "evil," and had tried and found liars those which professed to be Apostles and were not, and because it hated the works of the Nicolaitanes, whom Christ also hated, we must suppose that in the first instance such Paulinists are intended who, appealing to the authority of Paul, perverted his principle of liberty ("all

---

<sup>1</sup> Rev. xxi. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. ii. 2, 6.

things are lawful," "all things are clean," "the earth is the Lord's and the fulness thereof"<sup>1</sup>) into a pretext for indulging the liberty of the flesh,<sup>2</sup> the continuation of Heathen practices and vices, such as participation in the sacrificial feasts of Heathen gods and the practice of unchastity.<sup>3</sup> But the important point is, that Paul himself had pronounced quite another judgment on these things; that he had again and again most emphatically condemned Heathen levity of this description on the part of his professed disciples ("Ye cannot partake of the table of the Lord and of the table of demons;" "Flee fornication! or know ye not that your body is a temple of the holy spirit, which ye have from God, and are not your own?"<sup>4</sup>); and that this is so completely ignored by the author, that his readers must

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. vi. 12, x. 26; Rom. xiv. 20.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. Gal. v. 13; Rom. vi. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Rev. ii. 14, 20. (To suppose that "mixed marriages" only are intended by *πορνείαι*, is, I consider, an entirely arbitrary limitation of the general meaning, for which no justification is supplied either in the immediate connection or in analogous cases: comp. 1 Cor. v. 1, vi.)

<sup>4</sup> 1 Cor. x. 21, vi. 12—20; Rom. xiii. 13; 1 Thess. iv. 3 sq., &c.

almost of necessity get the impression that with those "evil" ones and false Apostles, not merely the licentious Paulinists but Paul himself was meant to be condemned. In this, however, the author of the Apocalypse betrays the vice which, according to the experience of all ages, party feeling ever brings with it, of not distinguishing between a principle and its abuse, and of charging the excesses of individual opponents upon a whole party, and especially its leaders, however innocent the latter may be. This was another instance of the Jewish party tactics which Paul had previously had to complain of at Rome, as we saw above from indications in the Epistle to the Philippians.

But we find in the Apocalypse none the less the idealistic conception of Christ which Paul acknowledged in Rome as the bond of union between himself and his opponents there. Like the Pauline Christology, that of the author of the Apocalypse hinges on the one hand on the expiatory death, and on the other on the celestial glory of Christ, whilst the earthly life of Jesus is referred to only so far that Christ is called the "Offspring of David" and

the "Lion of Juda;" just as Paul in the Epistle to the Romans had connected Christ's descent from David with his Divine Sonship. As Paul denominated Christ the Passover slain for us, so our author likes to describe him as "the Lamb slain for us," and finds in his violent death a proof of his love for us and an expiation to purify us from the guilt of sin, a ransom to redeem us to God.<sup>1</sup> Again, as Paul calls Christ the first fruits of them that slept, so in the Apocalypse we find him termed the first-born from the dead.<sup>2</sup> As, according to Paul, Christ has been exalted to the regal dignity of divine dominion over all, so, according to our author, he has taken his seat on the throne by the side of his Father, participating therefore in His divine dominion and power; he is the Lord of the churches, holds their stars, or guardian angels, in his hand, and is also Ruler of nations and King of kings, the all-wise and almighty Judge of the nations; indeed, to him is due a worship similar to that of God himself.<sup>3</sup> As the author of the Apocalypse in his

---

<sup>1</sup> Rev. i. 5, vii. 14, v. 9.      <sup>2</sup> Rev. i. 5; comp. 1 Cor. xv. 20.

<sup>3</sup> Rev. i. 5, iii. 21, ii. 12, 16, 23, v. 8—14, xi. 15, xix. 16, xx. 6.

apotheosis of Christ as an object of worship thus almost outstrips Paul, neither does he in his dogmatic definitions of Christ's nature at all fall behind the Apostle. Like Paul, he calls Christ the "Son of God" in the metaphysical sense of a god-like spiritual being, and far beyond the merely theocratic significance of the title. As Paul had said, "The Lord is the Spirit," so our author identifies Christ with the Spirit, or celestial principle of revelation which speaks to the churches and rules in them.<sup>1</sup> As Paul had had a vision of Christ as the Man from heaven in celestial light and glory, so the author of the Apocalypse likewise beholds him in a super-mundane form like unto a son of man, his face shining as the sun.<sup>2</sup> As Paul had described the celestial Son of Man as at the same time the image of God, the agent of creation, the head of every man, and finally even God over all,<sup>3</sup> so the Christ of the Apocalypse introduces himself with the predicates

---

<sup>1</sup> Rev. ii. 7, xi. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. i. 13, xiv. 14; comp. 2 Cor. iii. 17, 18, iv. 4, 6; 1 Cor. xv. 47.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. viii. 6, xi. 3; Rom. ix. 5.

of Divine majesty, "I am the Alpha and the Omega, saith the Lord God, who is and who was and who is to come, the All-powerful;"<sup>1</sup> and he is accordingly called<sup>2</sup> also "the Head of creation" and "the Word of God," that is, the mediating instrument of all divine revelation from the creation of the world to the final judgment.

It appears from this that the similarity of the Christology of the Apocalypse to that of Paul is complete; this Christ occupies the same exalted position as the Pauline Christ above the terrestrial Son of Man. Would such a view of Christ be conceivable in the case of a man who had lived in personal intercourse with Jesus? I think we have in this another proof that the author of the Apocalypse was not the Apostle John. But if he was a Jewish Christian of Rome, no doubt can exist as to the source of his Christology; its intrinsic likeness to the Pauline form of doctrine betrays its direct

<sup>1</sup> Rev. i. 8, xxii. 13. (From this parallelism and the connection with i. 7, it appears to me that the reference of i. 8 to Christ is placed beyond doubt.)

<sup>2</sup> Rev. iii. 14, ἀρχὴ τῆς κτίσεως; xix. 13, ὁ λόγος τοῦ θεοῦ.

origin in Pauline influences. Supposing that to be the case, we can the more readily understand how Paul could truly rejoice at the proclamation of Christ by his opponents in Rome, in spite of all their unfriendliness towards himself personally: he recalled saw his opponents walking in his own footsteps. The power of genius in history is just this, that it compels its very enemies against their will to submit to, to learn from, and to serve it. As a fact, the author of the Apocalypse became the most efficient herald of the Pauline idea of Christ, by throwing it into the poetic form of prophetic intuition, in which it impressed itself on the Greek and Roman no less than on the Hebrew mind. Thereby the centre of cohesion, offering points for the harmonious combination of different theological conceptions, had been supplied to the contending parties of primitive Christianity, just when they appeared to be threatened with perpetual disunion in the matter of the validity of the Law.

The results of this consensus with regard to the cardinal question of Christology are evident in the case of the author of the Apocalypse himself in his

more moderate tone in relation to the question of the Law. Strictly Jewish as his own line of thought is, and thoroughly suspicious as he is of the idealistic Pauline principle of freedom from the Law, which he saw degenerating into a heathenish license of the flesh, he is very far, nevertheless, from the overbearing intolerance of the zealots of the Law at Antioch or in Galatia. Nowhere does he put forward the requirement of circumcision, or of the observance of the Jewish festivals; on the contrary, to the moderate party of Heathen Christians at Thyatira, who did not, like the radical libertines with their cultus of the flesh, think they were obliged to sound "the depths of Satan," he expressly declares that he will lay upon them no further burden, only they must hold fast to their past good practice.<sup>1</sup> What that was he does not, it is true, expressly state, but he enables us to gather it with probability from the antithesis to the evil practices censured and the other exhortations of the epistles in the Apocalypse: it was abstinence from all

---

<sup>1</sup> Rev. ii. 24, 25.



Heathen worship and Heathen unchastity—nothing else, therefore, than the simple fundamental principle of pure religion and morality, which had previously always been required of Jewish proselytes, and subsequently of Gentile Christians. To those Heathen Christians who hold fast to this simple principle of Christian morals, and also keep the word and the works of Christ—that is, maintain their Christian confession and life—in faithfulness unto death in the midst of persecution and suffering, the author of the Apocalypse promises the crown of life and a place at the marriage-feast of the Lamb, and a share in Christ's universal dominion, whilst he condemns those Jews who are enemies of Christ as false Jews and of Satan's synagogue.<sup>1</sup> Our author has accordingly got decidedly beyond the narrow limits of Jewish particularism, although it must be allowed that he does not as yet quite occupy the elevation of Pauline universalism, inasmuch as, like the prophets, he still finds in Israel the fundamental element of the theocracy, to which the number of

---

<sup>1</sup> Rev. ii. 9, iii. 9.

Heathen of all nations come as clients and partial citizens permitted to share its privileges.<sup>1</sup> Nevertheless, he recognizes in these multitudes from the Heathen true Christian brethren, "who have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb," and whom "the Lamb will feed and guide to the fountains of living water." Paul had similarly written to the Corinthians, that they had washed themselves and been sanctified and justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and in the spirit of our God. In his recognition of the cleansing virtue of faith in Christ for all, including the Gentiles, our Jewish-Christian author, therefore, agrees entirely with Paul; but at the same time, it must be admitted, he pre-supposes that those who are invited to the marriage of the Lamb have been clothed in that silk wedding-garment which consists of the "righteous acts of the saints."<sup>2</sup> The righteousness of the works (of the Law) is, and remains

<sup>1</sup> Rev. vii. 3—8, and 9—17, also xix. 5, οἱ μικροὶ.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. xix. 8, τὰ δικαιώματα τῶν ἁγίων = תְּהִלָּה, i. e. acts of obedience to the Law, legally prescribed acts.

in his view, the indispensable condition of participation in the Messianic salvation, and on this realistic standard of moral action he lays the greater stress as he saw the idealism of righteousness by faith going in practice dangerously astray in the case of many Paulinists.

Exactly the same position is taken in this matter by the author of the *Epistle of James*, who in other respects occupies a place further removed from Paul than that of the author of the *Apocalypse*, inasmuch as, unlike the latter, he lets us catch no glimpse of the Pauline Christology. And while the author of the *Apocalypse* nowhere directly and expressly opposes Paul himself, it can hardly be doubted that the author of the *Epistle of James* has done this. His attack upon the Pauline doctrine of justification may, it is true, have had its immediate provocation in the conduct of those Paulinists who, with genuine Greek intellectualism, emptied the Pauline idea of faith of its deep inward meaning, converting it into a doctrine of faith, a dogma, a formula of a creed, a philosophical doctrine of the schools, or, in a word, into a mere matter of the understanding;

hereby throwing into the background at one and the same time both the religious mysticism and the moral power of faith in the genuine Pauline sense. Although this may be accepted as the most probable occasion of the Epistle of James, there is no room on that account to doubt that James failed to distinguish between the disfigured doctrine of faith held by these Paulinists and Paul's own idea of it; undoubtedly he himself understood the latter in the sense of the former, and thus in his attack on the disciples of Paul dealt blows at their master at the same time. When James says, "Ye see that by works a man is justified, and not only by faith,"<sup>1</sup> no unprejudiced reader can fail to see in these words a direct polemical reference to the sentence of Paul, "We reckon therefore that a man is justified by faith, apart from the works of the Law." Neither can it well be an accidental coincidence that each of them produces proof of his position from the history of Abraham. While Paul sees in the believer in Christ a new creature that has received the quick-

---

<sup>1</sup> James ii. 24 = Rom. iii. 28.

ening spirit from God, and feels its power as the impulse of love which brings with it the fulfilling of the Law, James considers that faith as such is something dead and powerless, a body without soul, requiring therefore to be first animated and supplemented by works. To a dead faith of this kind, which even the demons may have, Paul would certainly not have promised justification as its fruit; he would, however, not have acknowledged it as genuine faith at all in the Christian sense.

The ground of this contention lies therefore, in the first instance, in a misconception of the nature of faith, or, to speak more definitely, in the fact that James did not comprehend the religious depth of the Pauline idea of faith, any more than that of the Pauline Christology. The further and deeper ground of the contention must be sought in the dissimilarity of the natures of the two men: the mystical inwardness and idealistic speculative bent of Paul's genius was met in the person of James by the sober realism of the practical understanding, which attaches exclusive importance to the uprightness of moral conduct, but is indifferent, or indeed

suspicious, with regard to the emotions and intuitions of the religious nature. We certainly may not refuse to this standpoint its relative legitimacy, but must grant that, in the case of many people, and people deserving of all respect, it is one which approves itself again and again as most intelligible and most suited to their natures; indeed, we must go further and allow that it even offers a very valuable counterpoise to the dangers of a barren dogmatism and sectarian orthodoxy, or, what is still worse, of an immoral antinomianism and libertinism, which, as the experience of all ages teaches, may so easily spring out of the excessive emphasizing of faith. At the same time it is certain that, with James as its pioneer, Christianity would never have become a universal religion, nor, indeed, a religion at all distinct from Judaism; just as little as a man like Erasmus could have produced the Reformation of the sixteenth century. The creative forces of religious history are, after all, always such religious heroes as Paul and Luther, who in the depths of their souls have had living experience of the mystery of religion, and have

gazed with the eagle-eye of genius into the deep things of Deity.

The further reconciliation of the opposition between Paulinism and Jewish Christianity, which still meets us in the Epistle of James in unmitigated intensity, was accomplished partly in the field of theological Gnosticism, to which the Alexandrine religious system contributed new ingredients of sufficient combining power to unite the resisting elements, and partly and specially in the field of Gospel narrative. And in this latter field the church at Rome was from the very first the leading spirit. According to ecclesiastical tradition, the oldest of our Gospels was written in Rome by Mark, a disciple of the Apostle Peter, after the death of Peter and Paul.<sup>1</sup> Doubt may be raised, for one reason or another, it is true, against the opinion that the author of our second Gospel was an immediate disciple of Peter and wrote down Peter's discourses "exactly" (as Papias related); neither can the mention of Mark in the First Epistle of

---

<sup>1</sup> Eusebius, *Ecc. Hist.* iii. 39, ii. 15; Irenæus, *Adv. Hæc.* iii. 1.

Peter (v. 13) be considered decisive evidence for that opinion, since it is conceivable that this very mention of Mark gave rise to the tradition which brought him into connection with Peter. There is no reason, on the other hand, for doubting that Mark was found in the immediate society of Paul during his imprisonment in Rome.<sup>1</sup> There is, in fact, very much to be said in favour of ascribing our second Gospel to this disciple of Paul; for it exhibits plainly various traces of Pauline influences and reminiscences.

The sentence at the very opening, in which Mark summarizes the subject of the preaching of Jesus, "The time is fulfilled and the kingdom of God is at hand; repent ye and believe in the gospel!" reminds us of specifically Pauline forms of expression.<sup>2</sup> The Evangelist then begins his account of the labours of Jesus with a series of wonderful cures and polemical discourses of Jesus, in which from the very commencement the profound contrast be-

---

<sup>1</sup> Philem. ver. 24; Col. iv. 10, 11; 2 Tim. iv. 11.

<sup>2</sup> Mark i. 15; comp. Gal. iv. 4, iii. 26.



tween the free spirit of the Gospel and the narrow legalism of Judaism finds marked expression. On occasion of a cure on the Sabbath he makes Jesus utter the great sentence, "The Sabbath is for man, and not man for the Sabbath; so that the Son of Man is Lord even of the Sabbath;"<sup>1</sup> a sentence the direct parallel of which does not occur in the other Gospels, whilst the affinity between it and the Pauline declaration, "The Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is there is liberty," is obvious. It is not by any means intended by this to raise a doubt as to whether the historical Jesus actually gave utterance to principles of this description; on the contrary, it is in the highest degree probable that he did; but in proportion as the Jewish spirit of the church in Palestine lacked the power to appreciate the reformatory opposition of Jesus to Judaism, the more important was it in the interests of Christianity that the Evangelist Mark had his eyes opened and trained in the school of the Apostle Paul to see what was new in principle in the mission

---

<sup>1</sup> Mark ii. 27, 28; comp. 2 Cor. iii. 17.

and teaching of Jesus. The doctrine of the predestination to salvation of some and the hardening of others (of the Jewish nation), so characteristic of Paul, occurs in Mark likewise in genuine Pauline phraseology.<sup>1</sup> And it is specially indicative of the Pauline Evangelist that he takes the very words which Paul had used in his Epistle to the Romans of the obduracy of the unbelieving Jews generally, and puts them into the mouth of Jesus as he complains of the want of faith and understanding displayed by his disciples, whom the Evangelist is never weary of placing, whenever an occasion offers, in the most unfavourable light imaginable.<sup>2</sup> He gives special prominence to their dulness and perplexity with regard to the two cardinal articles of the Pauline gospel—the word of the Cross and of the resurrection of Jesus. Although Jesus, as the Evangelist emphatically insists, “spoke the saying (of his death and resurrection) openly and unreservedly,” (παρρησίᾳ), they remained, notwithstanding,

<sup>1</sup> Mark x. 40, iv. 11, 12 ; comp. Rom. ix. 23, xi. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Mark viii. 17, 18, ix. 19.

in ignorance with regard to it, and, in timid embarrassment, did not venture to question him about it;<sup>1</sup> for they, and especially Peter, minded not the things of God, but the things of men. Similarly, when Jesus, after his transfiguration, spoke of the resurrection of the Son of Man, the disciples, as Mark relates, questioned among themselves, in perplexity, what the rising from the dead should mean.<sup>2</sup> Now, though criticism may raise doubts as to the historical character of these definite predictions of death and resurrection, it is at all events certain that *if* on some occasion Jesus spoke thus openly on the point, as the Evangelist reports, the persistent inability on the part of the disciples to understand such utterances would be very hard to comprehend. We shall therefore be obliged to see in this language of the Evangelist at least a strong hyperbole, the cause of which will have to be sought in his general estimate of the first Apostles.

---

<sup>1</sup> Mark viii. 32, 33, ix. 32; comp. 1 Cor. ii. 14, 15; Rom. x. 2, 3; 2 Cor. iv. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Mark ix. 10.

When, now, we consider that it was precisely the perception of the meaning of the death and resurrection of Christ that formed the basis of the Pauline system, what the Evangelist meant is clear when he thus pointedly emphasized the inability of the disciples to understand those cardinal points of the Pauline gospel. It is just here also that we may find the clue for deciphering the hieroglyphic of the narrative of the transfiguration; for it is quite obvious that this is an idealistic narrative, for which the Apocalypse and the Pauline Christology have supplied the elements. Just as Paul placed the imperishable glory of God in the face of Christ in contrast with the transient glory on the face of Moses, and inferred thence the inferiority and transient significance of the old covenant of the letter as compared with the surpassing and permanent glory of the new covenant of the Gospel of the Spirit;<sup>1</sup> in like manner the allegorical narrative of the Evangelist places the transfigured Jesus side by side with the two representatives of the old

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iii. 7—11, iv. 6.

covenant, Moses and Elias. But what is the relation of the disciples to this allegorical vision? Peter goes so far as to wish to build tabernacles for the common and permanent abode of all three; that is, he desires to see the transient and the permanent, the old and the new, the letter and the spirit, associated for all time,—“he knew not what he said; for they were sore afraid, and a cloud was overshadowing them.”<sup>1</sup> In this you have the allegorical illustration of the utterance of Paul, “their minds were hardened, for unto this very day the same veil lieth over the reading of the Old Testament, it not being revealed that it is done away in Christ.” And just as the disciples were unable to understand the meaning of the transfiguration (resurrection), namely, that thereby Jesus became the Lord, who is spirit and freedom; so neither could they understand the true purpose of God in the case of the scriptural utterance regarding the sufferings of the Son of Man.<sup>2</sup> And on that very

---

<sup>1</sup> Mark ix. 5 sq.; comp. 2 Cor. iii. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Mark ix. 12, 32; comp. 2 Cor. iv. 4, v. 16, 17; Gal. vi. 12.

account they are then likewise unable to expel in Christ's name the evil spirits of Heathenism, and thereby betray the fact that, notwithstanding all their long intercourse with Jesus, they lack still (true) faith;<sup>1</sup> whilst, on the other hand, one who did not follow in the company of the disciples of Jesus, cast out demons in his name and worked miracles, and for that reason is acknowledged by Jesus as a disciple, whom the others ought not in their jealousy to hinder in his beneficent activity.<sup>2</sup> Thus the Pauline Evangelist makes Jesus himself the apologist of the greatly reviled Apostle Paul, who, though the last of the Apostles, had yet laboured more than all the rest, who, notwithstanding their intercourse with Jesus, of which they boasted to Paul's disadvantage, were censured by Jesus himself as a faithless generation with hardened hearts and blinded eyes. This was the Pauline reply, to the glorification of the Twelve in the Apocalypse, at the cost of the Apostle to the Heathen.

---

<sup>1</sup> Mark ix. 18, 19 ; comp. Gal. ii. 6, iii. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Mark ix. 38, 39 ; comp. 1 Cor. xii. 3, xv. 9, 10 ; 2 Cor. xii. 11, 12.

Jewish Christianity, thus attacked with weapons from the arsenal of Gospel tradition, made its reply in the "Gospel according to Matthew." In this Gospel, the earlier one of Mark has been combined with copious additional materials, consisting of discourses of Jesus, and taken from Galilean tradition; and the combination has been effected in such a way that the author, who occupies the same position as the writer of the Apocalypse, urges his dissent from both the Pauline freedom from the Law and the narrow particularism of the Jews. At the very beginning of the lengthy "Sermon on the Mount," to which is assigned such a prominent position as the programme of the labours of Jesus, the Evangelist inserts into the materials before him a few sentences which contain unmistakably an allusion to the Apostle Paul: "Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments and shall teach men so, shall be called *the least* in the kingdom of heaven; but whosoever shall do and teach them, he shall be called *great* in the kingdom of heaven."<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Matt. v. 19; comp. 1 Cor. xv. 9, ἐλάχιστος.

The humblest part is here assigned to Paul in the kingdom of heaven, with an evident intentional allusion to his own personal confession, because both in practice and teaching he broke the small things of the Law (the "letter"); a share in the kingdom of heaven is not altogether denied him (which would have been necessary in opposition to an ungodly antinomianism); but it is only equal rank and equal rights with the first Apostles, for which Paul had so often contended, that are absolutely refused him by the Jewish-Christian Evangelist. Peter, on the other hand, is represented expressly as "the first."<sup>1</sup> If Paul himself had based his full Apostleship on an immediate revelation from God, finding in this more than a sufficient compensation for his imperfect acquaintance with Christ after the flesh,<sup>2</sup> the Evangelist Matthew, on the contrary, makes this immediate revelation of God, which had not been communicated through "flesh and blood," the pre-eminent distinction of

---

<sup>1</sup> Matt. x. 2, *πρῶτος*, and v. 19, *μέγας*.

<sup>2</sup> Gal. i. 16, 17; 1 Cor. ix. 1; 2 Cor. x. 7.



Peter; and for the same reason he causes the "keys of the kingdom of heaven" to be committed to him, with authority to "bind and loose" (to legislate as to things forbidden and permitted), and represents the "Church" of Christ as built for all time upon the immovable rock of his authority;<sup>1</sup>—a glorification of the "Pillar-Apostle," the historical authenticity of which is disproved beyond doubt both by the internal difficulties of the whole passage and by its absence from the other Gospels. But whilst the Apostle Paul himself is attacked in the first Gospel and put below the first Apostles only in a covert and indirect manner, Pauline antinomianism, on the other hand, is repudiated directly and unconditionally as unchristian. In the highest degree characteristic in this respect is the turn which the Jewish-Christian Gospel has given to the conclusion of the Sermon on the Mount, where Jesus is made to say, "Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name, cast out devils and done many mighty works? And

---

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xvi. 17—19.

then will I profess unto them, I never knew you; depart from me, ye that work lawlessness!"<sup>1</sup> We hear in these words plainly the judgment of a legalistic Jewish Christian upon those Paulinists who call Jesus their Lord, are accustomed to speak of him in exalted language, and perform miracles also in his name, but who will, notwithstanding all that, not be acknowledged by the Messiah as his followers, for the reason that they work "lawlessness." It may be true that the Evangelist was thinking in this passage primarily of those ultra-Paulinists whose antinomianism had degenerated into heathenish libertinism; still he has not given the slightest indication of any marked difference between this extreme offshoot and the truly Pauline party, and therefore most likely did not himself make the distinction at all; on the contrary, he has evidently confounded Paulinism and libertinism, regarding them simply as both products of the same reprehensible principle of "lawlessness," differing from each

---

<sup>1</sup> Matt. vii. 21—23 (the peculiar form of expression must be observed, οἱ ἐργαζόμενοι τὴν ἀνομίαν).

other only in degree. We met with exactly the same thing in the Apocalypse; and this inability to distinguish between a moral and an immoral "lawlessness" is thoroughly characteristic of Jewish Christianity generally, and is most closely connected with the primary principles of the Religion of Law, according to which the positive Law is equally obligatory in all its parts, and the violation of any one commandment equally reprehensible with that of the rest. Though in daily life numerous restrictions of this principle had to be allowed, Jewish Christianity could not give up the principle itself without surrendering its own existence; for this reason a *modus vivendi*, and not a reconciliation on principle, was all that was ever possible between Paulinism and Jewish Christianity. This statement is confirmed by all the productions of this party in the first Christian age, not excepting those of a moderate tone, to which, it must be allowed, the Gospel of Matthew belongs.

For this Gospel is as far removed as the Apocalypse from a narrow Jewish particularism. It has transmitted, it is true, a few sayings, derived un-

doubtedly from the Palestinian sources used by the author, in which an extension of the mission of Jesus and his disciples beyond the national limits of Israel appears to be disavowed.<sup>1</sup> But side by side with this apparent limitation, we find in the woman of Canaan and the Heathen centurion models of Gentile faith presented with a view of shaming unbelieving Judaism;<sup>2</sup> in several parables the call of the Heathen in the room of the Jews, who had rejected the call which they had been the first to receive, is anticipated;<sup>3</sup> and, lastly, when Christ is parting from the disciples, the final command is put into his mouth,<sup>4</sup> "Go ye and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them and teaching them all things which I have commanded you." The action of the Apostles, which was the opposite of this injunction with regard to the Gentile mission, is proof that they did not remember having heard such a commission; this command must therefore have originated in the later period when our Evangelist wrote, and when Jewish Christians could no longer contest

---

<sup>1</sup> Matt. x. 5, 6, xv. 24, 26.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. viii. 10—12.

<sup>3</sup> Matt. xxi. 43, xxii. 6, 7.

<sup>4</sup> Matt. xxviii. 18, 19.

or ignore the actual successes of the Gentile mission, and might feel it was more to their interest to let the honour of those successes rest upon the original Apostles as well as upon Paul, and upon them before him. In what sense and under what conditions, however, the first Evangelist can sanction the mission to the Heathen, he indicates by the further clause, "teaching them all things which I have commanded you;" with regard to which we must remember that, according to the first Evangelist, the, "all things" signify the validity of the whole Law, the smallest letter of which, as we are told elsewhere (v. 18), must not be broken. The same thing is intended by that episode, peculiar to the first Evangelist, in the parable of the royal Wedding-feast, according to which one guest appears without a wedding garment. The explanation of this episode is supplied in the passage of the Apocalypse, from which the Evangelist without doubt took the figure: at the Messianic marriage feast the Lamb's bride will be arrayed in a pure, bright silk garment, which will signify "the righteous acts of the saints."<sup>1</sup> The

---

<sup>1</sup> Rev. xix. 8, Matt. xxii. 11 sq.

meaning of the parable in Matthew's form of it is, accordingly, that to the blessings of the Messianic kingdom all men will have admission, including the Heathen, but only under the condition that they show themselves worthy of this honour by keeping the Law (as a whole, without excepting the small and external elements of it, v. 18, 19). We see how far *this* universalism is still removed from that of the Apostle Paul.

While in the Gospel according to Matthew moderate Jewish Christianity found its expression and organ, in the Gospel according to *Luke*, which was written somewhat later, Paulinism once more made itself heard, though it is not, it must be admitted, the pure Paulinism of the Apostolic age, but the popularized irenical Paulinism of the second, post-apostolic generation, which was directed not so much against an exclusive and aggressive Jewish Christianity, as against unbelieving Judaism, whilst it was on good terms with moderate Jewish Christians. The third Evangelist was in sympathy with his own age of the nascent universal Church, and he has given an account of the rise of Christianity

adapted to the practical necessities of the time. For this reason his Gospel was written, far more than its two predecessors, under the influence of idealistic considerations of a dogmatic and practical religious nature: the Pauline conception of Christ has been sketched in the brilliant colours of apocalyptic poetry, upon the basis of numerous and varied historical traditions.

The life of Jesus previous to his public ministry is told in this Gospel much more fully than in the Gospel of Matthew. The Pauline ideas, that it was "the Son of God according to the spirit of holiness," "the Second Man from heaven," who in the fulness of the times was "born of a woman, made under the Law that he might redeem us"<sup>1</sup>—how marvelously has the third Evangelist managed to give expression to them in the profound yet childlike language and imagery of religious poetry! In fact, in the narratives and hymns of his story of the birth and childhood of Jesus, the sweetest blossoms of the religious poetry of all times were woven by

---

<sup>1</sup> Rom. i. 4; 1 Cor. xv. 47; Gal. iv. 4, 5.

Luke into the garland which he hung round the picture of the earthly life of the celestial Son of Man. While Matthew made the preaching of Jesus open with the Sermon on the Mount, the programme of which lies in the utterance, "I am not come to destroy but to fulfil the Law and the Prophets," and its conclusion in the sentence of rejection upon the "workers of lawlessness," Luke,<sup>1</sup> on the contrary, puts in the foreground the sermon in the synagogue at Nazareth as a model of the labours of Jesus, and though he makes him speak of the fulfilment of Scripture, it is not the fulfilment of the Law but of the promise. But these "words of grace" which proceed from the mouth of Jesus are not understood by his fellow-townsmen; and when he proceeds to remind them of previous examples of the preference of Gentiles to Israelites, they cast him out of the town in indignation and seek to kill him—an anticipation of the subsequent course of events when Israel was offended at the Pauline gospel of grace, and was provoked to angry jealousy

---

<sup>1</sup> Luke iv. 16—30.



by the entrance of the Heathen into Messiah's kingdom before themselves. To the anti-Pauline sentence of Matthew against the "workers of lawlessness," Luke gives an anti-Judaic turn;<sup>1</sup> to the fellow-countrymen and contemporaries of Jesus who place reliance on the fact that they have eaten and drunk in his presence and he has taught in their streets, Jesus makes reply in this passage: "I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, ye doers of iniquity!" In the same way Luke has omitted the anti-Pauline episode of the guest without a wedding garment in the parable of the Marriage Feast, substituting for it a further detail to symbolize the universal Gentile mission.<sup>2</sup> Again, peculiar to Luke is a series of parables and narratives, which, whatever foundation they may have had in the traditions used by him, in any case in Luke's version of them, plainly give expression to the relation to Judaic Christianity of Paulinism in a later stage. To this series belong especially

---

<sup>1</sup> Luke xiii. 25 sq.; comp. Gal. ii. 6; 2 Cor. v. 16.

<sup>2</sup> Luke xiv. 16—24.

the parables of the Pharisee and Publican and the Prodigal Son, in which the justification of the penitent sinner is contrasted with the proud self-righteousness of the Jews. Who does not recognize in the sulký displeasure of the elder son at the kindness of the father towards the returned younger son the jealousy of Heathen Christians felt by Judaism, with its boastful self-righteousness?<sup>1</sup> It corresponds completely, also, to the irenical manner in which Paul had spoken, Rom. xi., with regard to the permanent validity of the hopes of Israel, when the elder son's jealousy is censured by the father as without justification, while the privileges of his primogeniture are not called in question. The parables of the Good Samaritan and the Rich Man and Lazarus have primarily, it is true, a general moral significance, and were taken by the Evangelist from existing (probably Ebionite) sources; but in the first of these parables the preference of the semi-Heathen Samaritan to the representatives of official Judaism serves the cause of the Heathen

---

<sup>1</sup> Luke xv. 28—32; comp. Rom. ix. 30—x. 4.

Christian party of the Pauline Evangelist, and to the latter parable he has annexed a closing application,<sup>1</sup> which—entirely foreign to the original meaning of the parable—amounts to an accusation against unbelieving Judaism. because it cannot be brought to repent either by Moses and the Prophets or by the miracle of the resurrection (of Christ) from the dead.

Decidedly Pauline, however, as the attitude of the third Evangelist is towards Judaism, his judgment with regard to Jewish Christianity and its leaders, the first Apostles, is, on the other hand, no less moderate. He takes a conciliatory position in this respect between the first Evangelist, who glorified the older Apostles exclusively at the cost of Paul, and the second, who placed them throughout in the most unfavourable light—a position characteristic of the conciliatory nature of later irenical Paulinism. The attitude of the third Evangelist in this respect is illustrated by the way in which he narrates the story of Peter's confession:

---

<sup>1</sup> Luke xvi. 27—31.

on the one hand, he omits (with Mark) the glorification of Peter as the rock of the Church and the possessor of the keys of the kingdom of heaven (recorded by Matthew), but, on the other hand, he represses also the severe censure of Peter on that occasion which the two previous Evangelists report. The account of the commission of the Seventy Apostles in addition to the Twelve, again, is peculiar to the third Evangelist as the latter number suggests Israel as the destination of the mission of the first Apostles, so the larger number indicates a mission to the Gentiles; for in Jewish tradition seventy is the number of the Heathen nations, a belief to which the legend of the Seventy Translators of the Old Testament into Greek also points. The instruction to the Seventy to eat whatever is set before them, wherever they find a reception in a city,<sup>1</sup> can be understood only on the implied supposition that Heathen cities are intended; the admonition to the missionaries not to scruple to partake of food which would be unclean to Jews

---

<sup>1</sup> Luke x. 8; comp. 1 Cor. x. 27.

is not only in complete accordance with the Pauline principle, but it is connected verbally with the direction of Paul, "Eat whatever is set before you." If the Seventy are therefore the representatives of the Pauline mission to the Heathen, we can the more readily understand how the Evangelist was able to describe their success as much greater than that of the Twelve; he passed over the latter with only a hasty glance, but when the Seventy have returned and with rejoicing tell of their power over demons (Heathenism), he makes Jesus say, "I beheld Satan fall as lightning from heaven;" that is, he perceives in the result of the Pauline mission to the Gentiles the victory of Christ over the empire of Heathenism. But it is noteworthy that immediately afterwards he causes Jesus to turn to "the disciples especially," that is, to the Twelve, with the words, "Blessed are the eyes which see what ye see!"<sup>1</sup> According to the view of this ironical Paulinist, which we have found Luke to be, the happiness of having seen Jesus with their

---

<sup>1</sup> Luke x. 23.

eyes remains, after all, the incontestable advantage of the first Apostles, which prophets and kings must envy them. The third Evangelist accordingly, with an impartiality which has got beyond the region of sectarian strife, ungrudgingly accords to each of the two primitive Christian parties its peculiar pre-eminence and its special historical position.

But while that is true, at the same time he does not leave us in doubt as to the side towards which his own sympathies incline. This appears not only in the fact that he has to extol, in accordance with the actual facts, the greater success of the Apostleship to the Gentiles; but apart from its outward results, Pauline Christianity, with its deeper inward life of faith, commends itself to him as the "better part," in comparison with the anxieties and troubles of the piety of works cultivated by Jewish Christians. For this is obviously the meaning of the beautiful story of the sisters Martha and Mary. When the busy Martha complains with reference to her sister as she sits at the feet of Jesus listening to his words, "Lord, carest thou not that my sister leaveth me to serve alone? Bid her therefore that

she also help!"<sup>1</sup>—we seem to hear a James complaining of the "vain man" who will not comprehend that faith without works is dead. And when Jesus thereupon takes the part of the accused sister with the beautiful utterance, "Martha, Martha, thou hast much care and trouble, but there is one thing needful! Mary hath chosen the good part which shall not be taken from her!"—we discern therein the paraphrase of the Pauline declaration, "We reckon therefore that a man is justified by faith apart from the works of the Law;" and, "It is no longer I that live, but Christ liveth in me; for the life which I now live in the flesh I live in the faith of the Son of God, who loved me!" To the same class belongs also the suggestive and charming narrative of the two disciples on the way to Emmaus,<sup>2</sup> which is peculiar to the Gospel of Luke. As these disciples were not of the number of the Twelve, we shall be justified in considering them to belong, according to the intention of the Evangelist, to the

---

<sup>1</sup> Luke x. 40, 41; comp. Rom. iii. 28; Gal. ii. 20.

<sup>2</sup> Luke xxiv. 13—33.

Seventy, that is, to be representatives of Pauline Gentile Christianity and of Paul himself. Just as Jesus manifested himself as the Christ raised from the cross to his glory to Paul on the road from Jerusalem to Damascus, when he was pursuing his way in spiritual blindness, so on the road from Jerusalem to Emmaus Jesus drew near to these disciples and they knew him not, because their eyes were still holden with sorrow at his death. But Jesus opened their eyes by showing to them from the Scriptures how necessary it was that Christ should suffer such things that he might enter into his glory: when he thus opened to them on the way the Scriptures, their hearts burned with fear and hope. In like manner the heart of Paul burned with the fire of his inward doubts and conflicts, as on the way to Damascus he pondered the words of Scripture, from the prophecies of which the necessity of the sufferings of Christ had been proved to him. When Jesus, as the evening had come on, turned in-doors with the disciples and took bread, gave thanks, broke it and gave to them, their eyes were at last opened, and he was known of them in the breaking of the bread of



the Supper. Thus the Pauline Christian recognizes Christ as the living Lord and quickening Spirit, not merely from the testimony of Scripture, but also from the immediate mystical and experimental evidence of the Lord's Supper, in which the broken bread and the consecrated cup are the mysterious agents of fellowship in the death and life of Christ.

When, finally, Luke's Gospel makes Jesus ascend visibly to heaven,<sup>1</sup> he once more illustrates in this closing tableau the leading thought of his entire historical narrative: it is not the life of the Son of David of the Jewish-Christian gospel which he seeks to present as the fulfilment of the promises to Israel; no, he that has been taken up into heaven is also the celestial Man who came from heaven, the Pauline Son of God according to the spirit of holiness, the Second Adam, in whom the purposes of God with mankind are to be realized, "that we might receive the adoption of sons."<sup>2</sup> This ideal conception of Christ the third Evangelist has, with incomparable skill, developed dramatically into a

---

<sup>1</sup> Luke xxiv. 51.

<sup>2</sup> Gal. iv. 5.

vivid historical picture, which, though it falls behind that of the two previous Gospels as regards strict historical reality, excels it in point of high ideal truth. This Evangelist might to a certain extent say with Paul,<sup>1</sup> "Though others have known Christ after the flesh, *we* no longer know him thus; for old things are passed away, all things have become new." In the light of the consciousness of the new Christian spirit of divine sonship, he beheld and delineated the life of the Lord. And did he not thereby succeed in presenting the real historical truth in one sense? We may say, certainly, that the immediate authority for his sketch of the life of Jesus was the Pauline idea of Christ; but then we must at the same time ask, whence did Paul derive that spirit of divine sonship which he saw personified in Jesus? Was not the ultimate source of this new conviction in reality the spirit of Jesus, that original religious consciousness of his own relation to God which constituted the essential element of the personality of Jesus? In this sense we may therefore say with

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. v. 16.

truth that the most idealistic of the Synoptic Gospels, which is the most closely related to the spiritual Gospel according to John, has delineated the inmost *nature* of the religious personality of Jesus more faithfully than the other two, particularly the Jewish-Christian Gospel according to Matthew, which conceived the person of Jesus with closer reference to his outward historical appearance. Inasmuch as the fourth Gospel goes a step further upon this course of an idealistic, dogmatic and didactic delineation of the life of Jesus, upon which Luke had previously entered, the conception of Christ presented by that Gospel likewise exhibits the influence of the impulses which in the first instance proceeded from Paul. Thus it was "the last of the Apostles" who accomplished "more than all the others" in this as well as other spheres: the depth of his insight into the personality and the inwardness of his love of Christ have found expression in both the tender and fragrant poetry of the third and the profound speculation of the fourth Gospel, supplying thus those elements from which the theology of the Christian Church has ever since constructed its idea of Christ. .

LECTURE V.

PAULINISM AND GNOSTICISM.



## LECTURE V.

### PAULINISM AND GNOSTICISM.

---

A Gnostic element lay from the very first in the Pauline gospel of the revelation of God in Christ, a fruitful germ of theological gnosis or speculative theology. Paul felt, it is true, that he had been called to preach the gospel not in persuasive wisdom of words, but in demonstration of spirit and power, that the faith of his churches might not be based upon the wisdom of men, but upon the power of God.<sup>1</sup> But though this gospel was to the Jews a stumbling-block and to the Gentiles foolishness, it embodied nevertheless the wisdom of God, namely, the mystery of the divine counsels of grace, which had been hidden, but was now revealed by

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. i. 17, 21, ii. 4, 5.

the spirit that searcheth the deep things of God, and which we have received from God in order that we may know the things given to us by God.<sup>1</sup> Although the natural man is not capable of understanding spiritual things, the believer whose mind has been enlightened by the Spirit of God is able to enter into the divine purposes of salvation which have been made known in Christ's death and resurrection, can put them before men in an intelligible form, can demonstrate their intimate connection with the general revelation of God in history, and can show how they are based upon the divine oracles of the Old Testament. This was in reality, as we have seen, the substance of Pauline theology, with its logical unfolding and demonstration of the "word of the Cross;" it was the *gnosis* of the mystery of the crucified Son of God, as revealed by God in the Apostle's mind. And in the radiance of this light which shone upon him from the face of Christ, the meaning and importance of the divine revelation of the Old Testament had grown

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. i. 23, 24, ii. 6—12.

clear to him; the "veil of Moses" which concealed the Old Testament from the Jews, so that they were unable to get to the spirit beneath the letter, was for the Apostle done away in Christ;<sup>1</sup> the spirit hidden beneath the letter was revealed to him, enabling him to find in the Law and the Prophets everywhere simply the preparatory agencies, promises, and types of the fulfilment in Christianity.

The subject-matter of this "pneumatic" interpretation of the Old Testament, which regards the letter as the vehicle of a deeper spiritual sense, was in Paul's case determined by his own personal religious experience; but in its technical method it was directly connected with the form of Jewish theology which was then cultivated especially in Alexandria. In this Alexandrine school, notwithstanding the greatest respect for the letter of tradition, there was really involved a new line of thought, which was as far removed from positive Judaism as it was closely related to the idealism of Greek philosophy. This school of thought would never have had of itself the

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iii. 14.



power to break through the limitations of Judaism and to found a universal monotheistic religion; it lacked the religious force requisite for such a purpose; but when associated with the Pauline gospel of Jesus Christ, Alexandrianism might become an exceedingly effective agent in the promotion of Christian universalism, as its mode of thought was more intelligible and obvious to the minds of Jews and Gentiles than the peculiar dialectics of Paul.

This combination of Pauline and Alexandrine gnosis, which becomes of such great importance in all future times, meets us first in the *Epistle to the Hebrews*, which was written in the reign of Domitian by a Paulinist, educated in the Alexandrine school, with the object of proving to Jewish Christians (probably of the Roman and other Italian churches), who had been shaken in their faith, the superiority of Christianity over Judaism. This object was not proposed with a view to putting down an aggressive Judaism zealous for the Law, such as might still continue to prevail in Palestine, but for the instruction and encouragement of an oppressed minority. The Jewish feelings

of this minority had previously been hurt by the preponderating influence of Gentile Christianity, and now it was further threatened and assailed with persecution for the name of Christ. It had consequently begun to waver in its Christian confession, and to look back to the religious services of the Synagogue.<sup>1</sup> It was necessary to show to these people that everything that Judaism had offered in the shape of religious institutions and means of grace was supplied still better by Christianity, and indeed by it alone in a perfect manner and one fully satisfying the heart. Consequently the relation of Judaism and Christianity is not conceived in this book as that of the Law in antithesis to the Gospel, as is the case in Paul's writings, but as that of the imperfect, typical and transient saving institution to the perfect archetypal and eternal one. Both the Law and the Gospel, therefore, are classed as saving institutions, the centre of which is formed by the priesthood with its service in the sanctuary, where the covenant of God with His people is

---

<sup>1</sup> Heb. x. 23—35, especially ver. 25, *καθὼς ἔθος τισίν.*

administered. Everything possessed by Judaism re-appears in Christianity—the priesthood, the sanctuary, sacrifices, a covenant, a holy people of God, promises, blessings, Sabbath rest. But Christianity possesses all these things in a much higher form than Judaism: there a changing sinful priesthood, but here one that remains and is sinless; there perpetually-repeated sacrifices efficacious for outward purification only, here once for all the self-sacrifice of the holy life of Christ, which has effected for ever a lasting salvation and a purification of the conscience; there once every year the entrance of the high-priest into the earthly sanctuary, here once for all access to the heavenly holy-of-holies opened for all by the high-priest Christ who is enthroned in heaven. The fundamental conception of Christianity presented in the Epistle to ‘the Hebrews lies in this idea of the celestial sanctuary with its divine high-priesthood.

But in this idea diverse conceptions are combined. At the basis lies the conception of the Jewish temple service, which the author, however, does not appear to have known by personal

acquaintance, but only from the study of the Pentateuch. When he, therefore, speaks of this earthly worship as the poor copy, or shadow, of a perfect celestial original,<sup>1</sup> it is evident that he has before his mind the Alexandrine conception of the higher or ideal world (*κόσμος νοητός*), of which the visible world is only an imperfect copy. And this "higher world" of Alexandrine idealism is again immediately connected in his thought with the "future world" of Jewish-Christian eschatology, just as in the Apocalypse the kingdom of God at the consummation of all things is conceived as the descent of the heavenly Jerusalem. But a peculiarity of the Christian Alexandrian is the identification of this transcendental world of speculative thought, or apocalyptic intuition, with Christianity, whereby the paradox is produced, that Christianity appears to be something that does not as yet belong to the present but only to the future world. The solution of this paradox, however, is found in the simple fact, that the future world is conceived as likewise the

---

<sup>1</sup> Heb. x. 1.

higher world, or local heaven, being in so far a present reality, with which Christians are placed by Christ, the celestial High-priest, in such communication that they are able to taste the powers of it, and have already received its first gifts.<sup>1</sup> The chasm between the world of sense and the world of ideas which the philosophies of Plato and Philo vainly sought to fill up, and the removal of which Judaism referred to the future, had in the thought of the Christian Alexandrian been already bridged over, at all events at one point, namely, in the mediatorial personality of Jesus Christ, who has come from and been exalted to heaven: in his mediation as High-priest the Church of the new covenant possesses the sure "anchor of hope," which has connected it with the immovable kingdom of eternal things, and is supplied with a pledge of the future fulfilment of all its desires.<sup>2</sup> The Christian assurance of salvation in the breast of the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews depends, therefore, as completely as Paul's, though its origin is

---

<sup>1</sup> Heb. vi. 4, 5.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. vi. 19.

different, on the person of Jesus Christ, on his atoning death and his exaltation to heaven.

The Christology of the Epistle to the Hebrews is not less, but rather more, copious than that of Paul, inasmuch as, together with the transcendental ideal view of Christ's person, it justly assigns to the historical side of the life of Jesus its due prominence, thereby seeking, like the Gospel of John, to combine the two views of Christ with regard to which Paul and the First Church were divided, though, we must confess, the reconciliation is not very thorough. On the one hand, Christ is a divine being, exalted far above men and angels, an effulgence of the glory and impress of the nature of God, through whom He made the world, and, indeed, a being who himself upholds all things (τὰ πάντα) by the word of his power,— predicates which are evidently based on the Alexandrine doctrine of Wisdom and the Logos.<sup>1</sup> But this celestial Son of God did not merely take upon himself the flesh and blood of God's children here

---

<sup>1</sup> Heb. i. 2, 3; comp. Wisdom of Sol. vii. 22 sq.

below, but during his life on earth shared also their weaknesses and temptations, only without sin, learnt obedience by suffering, and, as a reward for his trials, was crowned with glory and honour, and became a merciful High-priest, who is able, wherein he himself suffered and was tempted, to succour the tempted.<sup>1</sup> According to the Epistle to the Hebrews also, the death of Christ is the central point of the work of redemption; that death, however, is not, as in Paul's Christology, 'the execution of the curse of the Law upon the vicarious representative of mankind, but it is partly the probationary suffering by the obedient bearing of which Jesus earned for himself "perfection" in celestial glory and gave us an example of patience under suffering, and it is partly a purifying expiatory sacrifice which, as more efficacious than the sacrifices of the Old Testament, effects the removal from the conscience of the defiling guilt of sin and the consecration of the covenant of the new community, and thereby abolishes the ancient sacrifices.<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Heb. ii. 14, 18, 19, v. 7 sq.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. ii. 9, 10, v. 9, ix. 14, x. 14 sq.

The emphasis, therefore, in this Epistle is not laid on the passive endurance of death in expiation of the Divine wrath, but on the presentation of the acceptable sacrifice of a holy life, that is, on the moral feeling and motives of the offerer; as this true spiritual sacrifice, Christ's death puts an end to the material sacrifices of the Old Testament ritual, and inaugurates the worship of God in spirit and truth. Thus the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews arrives at the same result as Paul; he did not, however, reach it through the Pharisaic theory of atonement, but through the idea, derived from the symbolism of the Old Testament ritual, of a moral act of sacrifice—a new point of view, which is also met with in the Gospel of John, and which was unquestionably more likely to be generally understood than the very peculiar, half-Jewish and half-mystic, theory of atonement taught by Paul.

The effect of the death and redemption of Christ is, according to the Epistle to the Hebrews, the opening of the celestial world of perfect fellowship with God in the case of those who in the true spirit



of faith follow the Author of their faith. In this Epistle, faith regards Christ not so much as its object as its model;<sup>1</sup> it does not signify a mystical identification with the crucified and risen Christ, but the moral and religious state of mind which is directed, according to the example of Jesus, in confident hope to the invisible world, and authenticates itself by faithful obedience in action and suffering. As this devout habit of mind, faith is in itself already morally excellent conduct, 'or righteousness, which is not, therefore, according to this Epistle, received by the believer as a gift of God, but is simply acknowledged and attested by God as a moral quality already possessed.<sup>2</sup> The Pauline antithesis of faith and works, faith and law, is here lost in the simpler idea of a devout state of heart well pleasing to God. If this might be regarded as in certain respects an approximation to the Jewish-Christian form of thought, the Epistle to the Hebrews nevertheless rejects Judaic legalism

---

<sup>1</sup> Heb. xii. 2, xiii. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. xi. 4, 5, 33, 39.-

not less decidedly than Paul.<sup>1</sup> It does not, it is true, justify its renunciation of Judaism by means of the bold paradoxes of the Pauline theory of the Law, but its allegorical use of the ritualistic laws of the Old Testament is really nothing else than another way of putting the genuine Pauline thought, that Christianity is the only perfect religion, to which Judaism, as an imperfect earlier stage of truth, must give place. With this form of stating the idea, moreover, the relative truth of Judaism and the positive historical connection of Christianity with the old covenant, receive more clearly their due acknowledgment than in the negative dialectics of Paul. On this account the theology of the Alexandrine Paulinism of the Epistle to the Hebrews was the better adapted to act as a neutral medium in the reconciliation of the differences existing in primitive Christianity.

A step further in the same direction was taken by the Epistle which bears the name of *Barnabas*, and originated in the same quarter. It likewise

---

<sup>1</sup> Heb. vii. 12, x. 9, iii. 3—6, 12—15.

seeks by an allegorical and typical interpretation of the Old Testament to show that Christianity is the true fulfilment of Judaism. But it does this by depriving the national and legal form of Judaism of even any relative importance, and simply condemning it as a demoniacal perversion of the truth.<sup>1</sup> According to the view of Barnabas, the Lawgiver never commanded the circumcision of the body, but only of the heart and ears, of which the prophets had previously spoken; but the Jews, deceived by a wicked angel, misunderstood the Divine will and introduced physical circumcision, which cannot, after all, be the true sign of the covenant, inasmuch as it was practised likewise by the Syrians, Arabians and Egyptians. The laws regarding food, too, had originally simply the force of moral allegories; the prohibition of the eating of pork, for instance, signifying merely a general warning against luxurious living, and the permission of the ruminants, an allegorical admonition to righteousness of life and devout rumination upon

---

<sup>1</sup> Barn. ii. iii. ix. x. xv. xvi.

the word of God; it was only the carnal mind of the Jews that understood all these directions literally as referring to material food. The ordinance of the Sabbath likewise was intended only to point to the commencement of the new world at the *parousia* of Christ, and found therefore its true fulfilment in the Christian Sunday, as the day of Christ's resurrection. The Jewish reverence for the Temple particularly appears to Barnabas to be a most unhappy Heathenish feeling, which God himself condemned by the destruction of the edifice, with the view of showing that the true Temple of God is the heart of the saints, or believers. In like manner God long ago declared by the Prophets that He desires no other sacrifices than the offering of the heart, and that the one fast acceptable to Him is to shun evil and to do good (Isaiah lviii. 6 sq.). By misinterpreting all these injunctions and observing them in an outward, carnal sense, instead of understanding them in the true ethical sense which God as well as Moses and the Prophets intended, the Jewish nation, according to Barnabas, simply demonstrated that it was not at all the people of God's

covenant which it claimed to be. This conclusion was confirmed also by the entire course of Israel's history, which, from the idolatry at Sinai to the crucifixion of Jesus, in which the nation filled up the measure of its sins, was one continuous demonstration of its reprobation.

This unqualified anti-Judaism undoubtedly grew up upon Pauline soil, but it has outgrown the feeling of Paul, who had, Rom. xi., earnestly censured and refuted a hard condemnation of Israel of this kind. It is, however, clear that it was only a short step from such a hyper-Pauline anti-Judaism as this to the Gnostic dualism of Marcion, who at last completely severed the historical connection between Christianity and Judaism. If the "gnosis" which the Epistle of Barnabas seeks to add to faith as a higher attainment<sup>1</sup> is not as yet strict Gnosticism in the heretical sense, inasmuch as it is not yet occupied with the transcendental world, but with the allegorical treatment of the history of reli-

---

<sup>1</sup> Barn. i. 5, *ἵνα μετὰ τῆς πίστεως ὑμῶν τελείαν ἔχητε τὴν γνώσιν.*

gion, it represents, nevertheless, the transition from Christian Alexandrianism to heretical Gnosticism. But before we trace the further development of the hyper-Pauline gnosis, we must cast a glance at that form of it, acknowledged by the Church, which arose within orthodox Paulinism, under the influence of Alexandrianism, at the beginning of the second century, and has been preserved in the Epistles to the Colossians and Ephesians.

The design of the *Epistle to the Colossians*, which is a product of the Pauline school, is to oppose heretical teachers, who, though Judaizers, are of an entirely different class from those with whom the earlier Pauline Epistles contend. They appear to have been Christian Essenes, who sought to introduce their speculations with regard to the higher spirit-world, and the spiritualistic asceticism connected therewith, into Christianity, and in attention to this supposed higher truth and sanctity lost from under their feet the foundation of historical faith in Christ and of healthy moral church life. The Paulinism of the Church opposed to this false gnosis, which reminds us of Cerinthus, the true gnosis, to its phantastic

notions of the angels its own speculative Christology, to its Ebionite asceticism its own ideal Christian morality. As the Colossian heretics had put Christ on a level with the angels, or had even made him subordinate to them, our orthodox Paulinist teaches the exaltation of Christ beyond all spiritual "powers" in language which reminds us not merely of the earlier Pauline Christology, but also of the Logos doctrine of Philo. Christ is, according to our author, the centre of the universe; all things were created not merely "through" him but also "unto" him, and have in him their permanent consistence; all the fulness of the Godhead dwelt in him bodily;<sup>1</sup> the incarnation of Christ, accordingly, is no longer conceived (as in Paul's Christology) as consisting in the laying aside of celestial glory, but simply in the veiling of it in a mortal body. To this cosmic position of Christ the significance of his work of salvation fully corresponds: the atoning effect of the death of Christ is no longer limited to the reconciliation of mankind

---

<sup>1</sup> Col. i. 15—19, ii. 9. -

with God, but embraces the entire world of spiritual existences, the angelic powers of the invisible world being included in the pacification effected by Christ; Christ is therefore not only the centre of the creation, but also the atoning mediator of peace throughout the entire terrestrial and celestial universe.<sup>1</sup> He is likewise represented as the victorious vanquisher of the hostile spiritual powers, which, as possessors of "the document against us" (the Law), held the world captive, as it were, in their grasp.<sup>2</sup> The Pauline idea that Christ delivered us from the curse of the Law by vicariously bearing it himself, acquires therefore in the thought of the Gnostic Paulinist a reference to the dominion of the empire of demons, whose terrible power over the sinful world was overcome and destroyed by the death of Christ,—a conception which reminds us of the subsequent mythological notion of the conflict of Christ and the Devil. For the very reason that in Christ the powers of the universe have been vanquished or reconciled, the Christian ought no longer to

---

<sup>1</sup> Col. i. 20.<sup>2</sup> Col. ii. 14, 15.



remain subject to them by the worship of angels and a self-willed and scrupulous asceticism, but must appropriate more and more completely the treasures of wisdom and knowledge hidden in Christ, must increase in the knowledge of God and walk worthy of the Lord, bringing forth fruit in every good work.<sup>1</sup> The orthodox Paulinist, it is true, also lays great stress on the place of knowledge in Christianity, but in contradistinction to false Gnosticism he requires adherence to Christ as the Head and to the fellowship of the Christian Church.

The practical turn thus given to the Pauline gnosis was subsequently carried out further in a fresh manner in the *Epistle to the Ephesians*, which coincides completely with the Gospel of John in theological tendency. The affinity of this Epistle with that to the Colossians has always been observed, but the difference—by no means inconsiderable—in the object and tone of the two has been usually overlooked. In the Ephesians there is not a trace of the heresies combated in the Colossians; as far

---

<sup>1</sup> Col. ii. 12, 13, 9 sq., iii. 10."

as the former is polemical at all, its conflict is not with Ebionite Jewish Christians but hyper-Pauline Gentile Christians, not with a scrupulous asceticism but a frivolous libertinism, not with Jewish particularism but Heathen, anti-Jewish arrogance and want of brotherly love. The object of the Epistle to the Ephesians was to restore unity between these two parties, which still continued to divide the Christian Church. It is just this which the author regards as the subject-matter of the Gospel revelation, the purpose of the mission and the death of Christ. The speculative teaching of the Epistle to the Colossians regarding the reconciliation of the celestial and terrestrial universe by Christ's death, receives in our Epistle the ethical application, that Heathen and Jews have been united by the death of Christ into one body—the Church—by the removal of the wall of partition in the Law.<sup>1</sup> The essential object of the death of Christ, according to this Epistle, is therefore no longer (as in Paul's writings) redemption from the curse of the Law,

---

<sup>1</sup> Eph. ii. 14 sq.

but the foundation of the universal Church by the harmonizing of all differences. The Christological speculation of Colossians, that "the fulness of the Godhead" dwelt bodily in Christ, comes in Ephesians to signify that the Church, as the body of Christ, is "his fulness," that is, the complete realization of his divine nature in human form.<sup>1</sup> The great emphasis which our Epistle puts on the continuous operation of the Holy Spirit as the source of revelation in the Church, is connected with this idea; the Spirit not only revealed Christian truth through the Apostles, but still continues to reveal it through the Christian prophets, whose inspired glance penetrates the depths of divine wisdom.<sup>2</sup> The Christian revelation is, accordingly, not an accomplished fact of the past, but the continuous and progressive development, in extent and depth, of Christian knowledge in the Church—a thought by which the Epistle is brought into direct rela-

---

<sup>1</sup> Eph. i. 23, iv. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Eph. i. 17, iii. 5, iv. 11 (*Christian* prophets, as the successors of the Apostles, and not those of the Old Testament, are intended here).

tions with the Gospel of John and with Montanism.<sup>1</sup> When, finally, the call of the Gentiles into the kingdom of Christ is described, Eph. iii. 5, as the subject of a revelation which "the holy Apostles and Prophets" had as a body received, we have therein a plain indication of the irenic feeling of the later Paulinism, which has forgotten or wishes to ignore the differences of the Apostolic age. The Epistle to the Ephesians is accordingly a significant monument of the desire of union characteristic of the Paulinism of the second century, from which we learn that the reconciliation of the various parties was then felt on the part of the Paulinists to be an urgent necessity.

The last act of the hundred years' conflict between Gentile and Jewish Christians was performed in the Roman Church in the middle of the second century. But this final act differed essentially from previous ones in that it was no longer parties

<sup>1</sup> Eph. i. 17 sq., iv. 13 sq.; comp. John xvi. 12 sq., and Tertull. *De Virgin. Veland.* i.

within the Church which were at war with each other, but the heretical extremes, on the right and the left, whilst the Church in opposition to them maintained a neutral intermediate position, and strengthened its unity in the midst of this very conflict with overstrained and extravagant tendencies. The older Gnostic systems, with their turbid mixture of Hellenistic philosophy and Oriental mythology, could not make any way in sober and practical Rome. On the other hand, the gifted Gnostic *Marcion* of Sinope found there suitable soil for his violently anti-Judaistic hyper-Paulinism. When he came to Rome, in the reign of Antoninus Pius and during the episcopacy of Pius (142 A.D.), he sought at first to attach himself to the Catholic Church, but soon betrayed his heretical doubts and inclinations by the captious exegetical questions which he proposed to the teachers. The Syrian Gnostic *Cerdon*, who was at that time teaching in the capital, exercised a decisive influence upon him. Cerdon had been led by the antipathy to matter which was traditional in Oriental speculation, to place the Creator of the material world

as an imperfect God in contrast with the God and Father of Jesus.<sup>1</sup> The wavering position of this teacher towards church fellowship did not deter his bolder disciple Marcion from deducing the consequences of that metaphysical dualism in relation to the religious consciousness, in such a way as to put Christianity in absolute and exclusive opposition to every pre-Christian, and especially to the Jewish, religion. The peculiar importance and the profound influence of Marcion on the Church are based upon this very fact, that, leaving out of view its transcendental speculations and cosmological mythologies, he applied Gnosticism directly to practical religious questions; and to this too was owing the fierce opposition which he, more than any other heretic of the first centuries, met with from the orthodox Fathers.

The starting-point and hinge of Marcion's system are nothing else than Paulinism exaggerated to the utmost. Paul had placed Christianity as the

---

<sup>1</sup> Tertull. *Adv. Marc.* i. 2; Iren. *Adv. Hær.* i. 27, 1, iii. 4, 3; Hipp. *Philosophumena*, vii. 37, x. 19.

“newness of the spirit” in contrast with Judaism as the system of the letter which killeth; and he had denominated the ritual of the Law of Moses the worship of the weak and beggarly elements of the world, from which the Christian has been delivered by faith in the Son of God. The authors of the Epistles to the Hebrews and the Colossians had acknowledged in the Jewish ritual types of higher things, but still only an unsubstantial and powerless prefiguration of the truth revealed in Christianity. The strictly Pauline and otherwise soundly orthodox author of the Epistle of Barnabas had gone further, and pronounced legalistic Judaism, with its literal interpretation of the ceremonial Law, a perversion of the real intention of God, having its origin in demoniacal infatuation. We have but to advance another step and we find ourselves on the standpoint of Marcion, who pronounces the God of Judaism another and less perfect being than the God of Christianity. The same wide difference which exists between the Law and the Gospel as religious principles, and between the material world, with which the commands and promises of the Law

are concerned, and the celestial world of evangelical promise, must, according to Marcion, likewise exist between the authors of the two religions.<sup>1</sup> The Jewish God, or the "Demiurgus," as Marcion denominated him after the customary Gnostic terminology, is as legislator and judge only righteous, severe and cruel, not good, kind and merciful, like the God of the Gospel. Marcion sought to establish this exegetically and dogmatically, by collecting all the accounts of the Old Testament in which human feeling is ascribed to God, and also by referring to contradictions between the commands of God and His way of acting on various occasions; the story of the Fall especially appeared to him to be inconsistent with the perfection of the Divine Being,—with His goodness, or truth, or power.<sup>2</sup> He was as little able to find a revelation of the true God in the Heathen religion of nature as in the Jewish religion of law; the material world of nature appeared to the spiritualistic Gnostic much

---

<sup>1</sup> Tertull. *Adv. Marc.* i. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. ii. 5, 11, 12, 20, *et al.*



too mean and impure to be possibly the work of the perfect and true God. The true God had therefore always remained unknown to the ancient world; He was first revealed by Christianity. And the revelation of the true God in Christianity was conceived by Marcion as given without the interposition of any historical medium, as an absolute miracle. The Pauline Christ was by nature the spiritual Man from heaven, but as regards the flesh he was at the same time connected with terrestrial humanity, especially with the fathers of Israel. This connection Marcion endeavoured at all costs to remove: his Christ must have nothing to do with either a Jewish extraction or a natural physical life. For this reason he denied his possession of a true human body and his human birth; Christ, he taught,<sup>1</sup> descended to the earth directly from heaven<sup>c</sup> as pure spirit in a merely illusive body ("phantasma") and appeared forthwith in the synagogue at Capernaum. The other Gnostics had taught Docetism, in a form more or less similar to this, but in their

---

<sup>1</sup> Tertull. *Adv. Marc.* i. 19, iii. 14, iv. 7.

case it had its basis in a metaphysical theory of the relation of spirit to matter; in Marcion's system, on the other hand, the real source of it was not so much a metaphysical theory as the religious postulate, that Christianity must be conceived as something absolutely new, a sudden miracle, without any natural and historical connection with the earlier human race—the exaggeration of the Pauline idea, that in Christ there is neither Jew nor Greek, but a new creature. The Epistle of Barnabas had also given a direct precedent for this postulate, as it expressly recognized in Christ the Son of God only, and not also the Son of Man.<sup>1</sup> We have a specially clear illustration of the great predominance in Marcion's Docetism of the religious over the speculative aim, in the surprising want of consistency (justly censured by Tertullian)<sup>2</sup> which he displays in decidedly maintaining the truth of the passion and death of Christ, though he denied his birth and his possession of a real human body. The

---

<sup>1</sup> Barn. xii. 10 (with an appeal to Ps. cx. 1; comp. Matt. xxii. 42, 43).

<sup>2</sup> Tertull. *Adv. Marc.* iii. 8.

reason of this inconsistency is clear: by a true human birth Christ would have been brought into connection with the realm of the Demiurgus, while the death which he suffered in consequence of the enmity of the Demiurgus was the manifestation of the absolute opposition between the two principles, and thereby prepared for the overthrow of the realm of the ruler of this world; for by committing the mistake of procuring the crucifixion of the Holy One, the Demiurgus forfeited his claim to rule the world. It is easy to discern in this a mythological expansion of the Pauline idea of Christ having redeemed us from the curse of the Law by becoming a curse for us, or of our having died to the Law through the Law. As Paul, finally, had deduced from his gnosis of the crucifixion of Christ the practical consequence that we ought to regard ourselves as dead to sin and to crucify the flesh with its lusts, so Marcion drew similar inferences from his dogmatic Christology, in this case again so exaggerating the Pauline idealism as to make of it an inflexibly rigorous asceticism, to which everything natural appeared reprehensible. The

married state especially was looked upon by Marcion and his school with great disfavour, as a condition belonging to the ungodly realm of the Demiurgus, from which the true Christian, as a member of the immaterial realm of the good God, must abstain;<sup>1</sup> the contraction of marriage was prohibited to the members of the sect, and from those already married the strictest abstinence was required. Beyond doubt this extravagant asceticism was, not less than his dogmatic vagaries, a reason for the decided condemnation of Marcion by the entire Catholic Church, including the moderate Paulinists particularly, whose special interest it was to decline any compromising fellowship with the hyper-Paulinists.

In this attitude of the Church we have an illustration of what so frequently happens in history—by the undue emphasis of a principle a reaction is provoked which undervalues and suppresses the relative truth of the position oppugned. Because Marcion exaggerated the Pauline antithesis of the

---

<sup>1</sup> Tertull. *Adv. Marc.* i. 29, iv. 34.

Law and the Gospel, the Church brought the two into such close proximity that the Gospel was made for it into a new Law. Because Marcion acknowledged Paul alone as the true Apostle of Christ—he accepted only ten Pauline Epistles and a mutilated Gospel of Luke as genuine Scriptures, and maintained that the Jewish Christians had adulterated the truth of the Gospel—the Church in turn would know nothing at all of the opposition between the first Apostles, and put Peter on an equality with Paul, or, indeed, before him. In proportion as the Gnostic excrescences of antinomian Paulinism threatened the existence of the Christian Church, the reputation of Peter rose in general estimation, his name being regarded as the watchword of historical conservatism and ecclesiastical authority, such as was required by the age, and which the Roman Church especially felt called upon to establish.

To this orthodox reaction against the hyper-Paulinism of Marcion, the religious party fiction (*Tendenzroman*) which appeared in the middle of the second century under the name of “Homilies and Recognitions of *Clement*,” owed its wide circulation and popu-

larity in the Roman Church. The story of this fiction is extremely meagre, and serves merely as the framework for a series of public debates between Peter and Simon Magus. The part played by this legendary magician and arch-heretic represents generally the heresy of Marcion, but occasionally the Gentile Apostle Paul also, who is accordingly regarded by the author as the intellectual originator of that heresy. In the letter of Peter to James, prefixed to the work, the Judaic author gives expression to his antipathy to Paul by making Peter complain that some of the Gentiles have adopted the anti-legal and foolish doctrine of the *inimicus homo* and interpret his (Peter's) words as if he had been equally hostile to the Law, but did not venture to declare his opposition as openly—an evident allusion to the charge of hypocrisy made against Peter by Paul in Antioch. The old point of contention with regard to the Apostolic dignity of Paul, for which the Apostle himself had had to fight so many battles, was also now raised afresh.<sup>1</sup> Simon Magus

---

<sup>1</sup> Hom. xvii. 13—19.

appeals to his visions, maintaining that by them he has obtained a better knowledge than Peter of the true nature of Jesus. To this Peter replies that visions and dreams cannot yield certain knowledge, as it can never be known whether some lying spirit or wicked demon may not be at the bottom of them. Indeed, this is the more probable, as the immaterial form of God, or of His Son, could not be really seen by mortals on account of its transcendent light. Hence, from the fact that a man has had visions or dreams, it cannot by any means be inferred with certainty that he is a pious man. On the contrary, the truth is revealed to the pious by virtue of a pure inborn sense of it; it is imparted to the godly by insight and not by dreams. In the heart put by God within us dwells the germ of all truth, and by God's hand it is veiled or revealed. When Simon (Paul) maintains that a man may be instructed by visions, so as to become a teacher, it is asked in reply, Why, then, did the Lord spend a whole year in intercourse with men who were awake? And how can we believe that the Lord has appeared to him, since he really holds

opinions opposed to the teaching of the Lord? "But if thou hast really been made by him an Apostle by virtue of the vision and instruction of a single hour, declare his words, expound his doctrine, love his Apostles, and do not contend with me who have had intercourse with the Lord! Thou hast as an antagonist withstood me, who am the immovable rock and the foundation of the Church. If thou wert not an enemy, thou wouldst not have scorned me and reviled my preaching, in order that I may not be believed when I speak the things which I have heard from the Lord himself. Or if thou pronouncest me 'condemned' (Gal. ii. 12), thou layest a charge against God, who revealed Christ to me, and thou censurest Him who called me blessed on account of this revelation (Matt. xvi. 18). But if thou art determined really to labour with us for the truth, learn from us first those things which we have learnt from the Lord, and having thus become a disciple of the truth, be our fellow-labourer."—Thus deep was the ill feeling on account of the contention in Antioch in Jewish-Christian circles as late as the middle of the second



century! Thus tenaciously was the opposition to the Apostolic office of Paul and the doubt as to his Apostolic call still maintained!

The opposition of pseudo-Clement is directed not less decidedly against the dogmatic positions of the Pauline preaching. In his view, so far is Christianity from being a new covenant and a new creation, that it is, on the contrary, nothing else than purified and reformed Judaism. The doctrine of Moses and Jesus, he says, is one and the same, and God therefore accepts every man who believes on either of them and observes the commands of either in practice. And whoever is counted worthy to recognize both as preachers of the same doctrine, and comes to perceive that old things have in course of time become new and new things old, must be counted as a rich man in God.<sup>1</sup> While Marcion, going beyond the Pauline idea, put Judaism and Christianity in opposition to each other as the religion of the Law and the religion of the Gospel, or of the just and of the good God, according

---

<sup>1</sup> Hom. viii. 5—7.

to pseudo-Clement Judaism is already the true religion, as it acknowledges the one Father and Creator of the universe, who is not less good than just—just as the Judge rewarding our deeds, good as forgiving the sins of the penitent. Wherein Christianity surpasses Judaism is simply that it removed the subsequent additions to the primitive divine revelation and made the latter known again in its first purity. Among these adulterating accretions pseudo-Clement reckons the whole of the ceremonial portion of the Mosaic Law, together with its national restriction to the Jews; further, all those expressions with regard to God's attributes or actions which do not accord with a spiritual or moral conception of Deity; finally, those narratives of the Old Testament in which things morally offensive are ascribed to righteous and favoured men of God. Such portions of the Jewish tradition and the Old Testament did not come from the true revelation, but from false prophecy, which is, like Heathenism, of demoniacal origin. It is to them the saying of Jesus refers, "Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted shall be rooted up." The

proof that Jesus did not regard such things as belonging to the true Law, which must remain until heaven and earth pass away, is found by Clement in the simple fact, that the Jewish sacrifices, monarchy and prophets, have actually passed away, while the heavens and earth still remain.<sup>1</sup>

We see that, with all his repudiation of the dualism of Marcion, pseudo-Clement nevertheless applies to historical Judaism a degree of criticism which in point of boldness is scarcely second to the Marcionite anti-Judaism. In order to prove the unity of Christianity and Judaism, the Gospel and the Law, he distinguishes in Judaism itself between the ideal essence of eternal truth and the positive, nationally limited form; and the first he accepts as revealed, whilst he ascribes to the second a demoniacal origin, and puts it on a level with Heathenism. The Pauline author of the Epistle of Barnabas had previously made just the same distinction. Thus the Paulinist and the anti-Paulinist joined hands in that intermediate position of the universal Church,

---

<sup>1</sup> Hom. iii. 52.

where everything of a nationally limited character that did not harmonize with the universalism of the Church was removed from Judaism, while whatever appeared to the Church as likely to support her authority in faith and practice was retained. Whatever in Paulinism was of directly practical importance for the nascent Church—its universalism and its abrogation of the Jewish ceremonial Law—advanced Jewish Christianity had by this time appropriated; but it made these concessions to the force of accomplished facts only with a view of the more decisively maintaining and forcing upon the Church, now becoming universal, its principle of righteousness by works, and a legal ecclesiastical constitution in opposition to the Pauline principle of faith and the emancipating spirit.

In other respects we must acknowledge that the Jewish-Christian gnosis of pseudo-Clement compares advantageously with the speculative and ascetic bent of Marcion in point of wise moderation and large-hearted tolerance. While, according to Marcion, Christ descended direct from heaven as an absolutely miraculous being, without any historical

relation to the human race, pseudo-Clement saw in him the last and highest revelation of the same divine prophetic spirit as had previously appeared in Adam, the Patriarchs and Moses, which is not essentially different from the eternal spirit of God implanted in all men. Since Adam had already the holy spirit of Christ, as pseudo-Clement repeatedly asserts,<sup>1</sup> Christ is not an absolutely new and supernatural phenomenon, but simply the most perfect manifestation of the ideal man, only relatively different from previous and less perfect manifestations of the one divine spirit of humanity. It is impossible not to recognize in this theory a certain affinity to the Pauline doctrine of Christ as the second Adam; the Christology of Paul may therefore claim to be the common root of the two schools of Gnosticism: in Marcion's system it was further developed in the direction of an abstract pneumatological Docetism, while in that of pseudo-Clement it takes the form of a natural and historical Ebionitism. If, according to Marcion, the entire

---

<sup>1</sup> Hom. iii. 20, xviii. 14.

pre-Christian race, both Jews and Gentiles, was under the dominion of the imperfect Demiurgus and without a knowledge of the true God, according to pseudo-Clement the knowledge of the truth is implanted in all men's hearts, and is revealed more or less clearly to them by God in proportion to their worthiness.<sup>1</sup> As man bears in his nature the image of his Creator, the good God, he is able and ought to become like God by purity of mind and the performance of what is good, and especially ought he to revere the image of God in his fellow-men by a practical exhibition of his love. Grateful love of God, which evinces itself in the love of those who bear God's image, is the innate and inalienable dignity of man.<sup>2</sup> On that account the Heathen is able to do what is truly good, and to make himself by his virtue worthy of the higher revelation of Christ, as is illustrated in the instance of Clement himself and his chaste mother. If, finally, Marcion, in consequence of his dualistic view of the material world, had taught a monkishly ascetic form of

---

<sup>1</sup> Hom. xvii. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Hom. xi. 4, 8, 27.

morals, and had even repudiated marriage as displeasing to God, the monotheist pseudo-Clement recognizes in the material world and in natural life a divine creation, intended for the service of man and the furtherance of his moral purposes; according to his conviction, marriage is so far from being reprehensible that he directs the bishops to exhort young people to marry at the proper time; and with fine moral feeling he sketches the ideal of Christian wedlock—how, when consecrated by piety, it has its firm basis in mutual esteem and love, and by self-discipline and decorum avoids all perils and seductions.<sup>1</sup>

In fact, this ideal of the moral life exhibits that sober wisdom which does not soar in visionary enthusiasm above the actual life of human society, but seeks to ennoble it by the sacred motives of religion, and thereby helps to qualify the Church to fulfil its practical work of educating the world. When we consider further the great stress put upon the authority of the Church, which anticipated the

---

<sup>1</sup> Hom. xiii. 18, xi. 23."

necessities of the time and was absolutely required for the development of Christianity in the midst of enemies without and strifes within, we can understand why the Homilies of the anti-Pauline pseudo-Clement should find favour in the Roman Church, where, nevertheless, the memory of Paul had never ceased to be held in high honour, and that they should be used to increase the influence of Peter as the representative of historical authority.





LECTURE VI.

PAULINISM AND THE CHURCH.



## LECTURE VI.

### PAULINISM AND THE CHURCH.

---

IN view of the growing dangers from without and within, the most urgent task put before the Christian Church of the first half of the second century was to reconcile in complete ecclesiastical unity Jewish and Gentile Christians, and at the same time to give stable organization to the Church by the development of its offices as representative of ecclesiastical tradition and authority. We have seen that Jewish Christianity first anticipated this want of the time, by putting decisively into force its spirit of legal discipline, represented in the person of Peter, though it suffered the national form of its legalism to drop. But neither had Paulinism been able to escape the tendency of

the age; it likewise made concessions, though not so much to the Jewish-Christian party as to the rising Catholic Church. In some respects the larger sacrifice even was on its part: for though it retained the form of Pauline doctrine, it exchanged the Pauline spirit of evangelical freedom and individual charismatic enlightenment for the "new Law" of ecclesiastical custom and authority. This transformation of Paulinism into Catholicism may be traced with growing distinctness in the *Epistle of Clement of Rome to the Corinthians*, in the *Pastoral Epistles to Timothy and Titus*, and finally in the so-called *Ignatian Epistles*.

The *Epistle of Clement of Rome to the Corinthians*, written at the end of the first century, is in several respects a document of the greatest importance in relation to the first period of ecclesiastical history. As a letter from the Church at Rome to that at Corinth, the design of which is the adjustment of certain disputes and disorders in the latter community, the document supplies the first trace of a supremacy of the Roman Church in Christendom. And it enables us to surmise the

grounds of this supremacy. They are not derived simply from the consecration of this Church by the martyrdom of the two foremost Apostles, which is mentioned for the first time in this Epistle (unless we have a still earlier trace of it in Rev. xviii. 20); they are to be found much more in the amalgamation of Paulinism and Petrinism in an intermediate neutral union, in the subordination of dogmatic, to practical ecclesiastical interests, and in the enforcement of the principle of authority, order and subordination, in contradistinction to the Pauline principle of the possession of the spirit and the free exercise of individual faith. The dogmatic form of Paulinism is preserved, it is true; as far as dogma is at all alluded to, the modes of expression used in the Epistles to the Romans and the Hebrews are retained (with which two authorities this of Clement forms the third, in proof of the predominant Heathen-Christian and Pauline character of the first Roman Church). Redemption through the blood of Christ is frequently spoken of,<sup>1</sup> Christ having given his

---

<sup>1</sup> Clem. Ep. I. ad Cor. xlix. xxi. xii. vii.

flesh for our flesh and his soul for our soul (as a substitutionary expiation), from love to us and according to the will of God; we must steadily look at the blood of Christ, and perceive how precious it is to God, since as shed for our salvation it procured the grace of repentance for the whole world (the possibility of being reconciled to God by grace on the condition of penitent faith, comp. Rom. iii. 25, *ἱλαστήριον διὰ τῆς πίστεως*). Clement accepts very emphatically the cardinal Pauline doctrine of justification by faith: "We are not justified by ourselves, nor by our own wisdom, or intelligence, or godliness, or by the works which we did in holiness of heart, but by faith, by which God justified all the pious from the beginning."<sup>1</sup> But inasmuch as Clement conceives of faith according to the wider view of it met with in the Epistle to the Hebrews, as the devout condition of confidence in and obedience to God, it no longer forms the antithesis to works, but is itself moral action, which *effects* righteousness (is not merely recipient

---

<sup>1</sup> Ep. I. ad. Cor. xxxii. ~

of it, as in Paul's view). Consequently Clement can also speak, like James, of being "justified by works and not by words," and of "forgiveness of sins by love, which in concord fulfils the precepts of God."<sup>1</sup> The emphasis is no longer placed on religious mysticism, but on moral practice, and the regulative principle of the latter is found, not in the inward law of the holy Spirit, but in the social customs and constitution of the Church, which, again, obtains its model and its authority from the legal regulations of the theocratic nation of the Old Testament. It is true, Paul had confined the freedom of Christians within the limits of love, which fulfils the law of Christ in the service of the brethren; but since love has within itself its own normal principle, Paul recognized in the "law of Christ" a "*law of the spirit*" which brings liberty, not a law of the letter which enslaves. But this truly Pauline idealism, which discovers the gospel of the freedom of God's children in the depths of the soul, was beyond the reach of the Roman with

---

<sup>1</sup> Ep. I. ad Cor. xxx. 1.



his practical and political habit of thought; he could only discern in it a principle of undisciplined subjectivity, which might endanger the orderly existence of the Church; in the place of it he put, therefore, the new *law of the Church*, which he most characteristically connected with the two models of the political and military organization of the Roman state and the sacerdotal hierarchy of the Jewish theocracy.<sup>1</sup> This was not an intentional concession of Heathen Christianity to Jewish Christians, or a conscious renunciation of Paulinism, the dogmatic form of which Clement, as we have seen, sedulously retains; it was, on the contrary, the insensible supplanting of the Pauline spirit of freedom and inward personal experience by a new spirit of legalism and external authority, for which Rome and Jerusalem offered their joint assistance. As a fact, the principle of authority represented by James thereby triumphed in the Church for nearly fifteen hundred years over the principle of liberty represented by Paul, but it was rendered possible

---

<sup>1</sup> Ep. I. ad Cor. xxxvii. xl."

simply because Rome succeeded to the heritage of Jerusalem; and Palestinian legalism having been stripped of its specifically Jewish form and invested with the Roman spirit of government, was made to serve the purposes of the universal Church. But the watchword in this fusion of Jewish and Roman characteristics was the name of *Peter*, the representative of historical tradition and of practical ecclesiastical moderation; in Clement's Epistle he is already placed before Paul, from whom he was destined subsequently to wrest the pre-eminence more and more completely.

The ultimate cause of this transformation of Paulinism into Catholicism was, it is true, to be found in the great historical fact of the migration of Christianity from Jerusalem to Rome, but it was materially assisted and accelerated by the conflicts provoked by heretical Gnosticism. The greater the dangers which threatened the Church from the phantastic mythology, the unhistorical docetism, and the inactive spiritualism of the Gnostics, the greater was the common interest of all moderate parties in the Church in putting

down this enemy. And as the gnosis of Marcion, which originated in Paulinism, was the most dangerous from its importance and the heretical movement which it caused, the orthodox Paulinists were most immediately interested in rejecting every compromising connection with this hyper-Paulinism, and in maintaining as decidedly as possible their orthodox position in opposition to it. It is, however, implied in the nature of the case, and recurs in ecclesiastical conflicts of all ages, that the representatives of a principle are, in a contention with one of its radical extremes, often driven more or less from their original position and brought nearer to their earlier opponents: alarmed and vexed at the exaggeration and abuse of their own principle, they insensibly qualify and soften it down. And that this was the fate of orthodox Paulinism in its conflict with heretical Gnosticism, may be plainly seen in the Deutero-Pauline and Ignatian Epistles, which represent the increasing transformation of Paulinism into Catholicism during the second and third quarters of the second century.

The false teachers opposed in the Pastoral Epistles

are no other than the heretical Gnostics of the second century, and are in fact expressly described, 1 Tim. vi. 20, as professing "the Gnosis falsely so-called." Only it is not a particular system, or a specific Gnostic school, which is opposed; the Gnostic heresy as a whole, as a general tendency of the age, is made the subject of summary condemnation. In general the charge is brought against it of over-estimating the value of theoretical controversies and phantastic speculations at the cost of practical godliness and the harmony of the Church. Departures from the faith of the Church are, further, everywhere brought into intimate connection with corruption of the heart and moral errors; and the sketch of the false teachers presented, which is so gloomy in this respect, appears to combine even vices of an opposite nature, such as love of pleasure and sensual wantonness with scrupulous asceticism. It is hard to say whether, and to what extent, orthodox zeal may possibly have drawn a darker picture of the opponents than the fact justified. Of specific errors which are either expressly or allusively combated the following may be men-

tioned: a spiritualistic denial of the resurrection, dualistic asceticism, mythological genealogies, i.e. the doctrine of *æons*, the Marcionite antithesis of Law and Gospel, of a Creator and a Redeemer, Gnostic particularism, and a Docetic Christology;<sup>1</sup> the latter, which appears to be but slightly alluded to, has become the subject of lengthy controversy in the somewhat later Ignatian Epistles.

The authors of the Deutero-Pauline and the Ignatian Epistles did not propose as their object a refutation of the Gnostic heresies or a dogmatic discussion with their upholders; they simply confronted them with "sound doctrine according to godliness," i.e. the consensus of opinion in the Church generally, putting forward the tradition of the Church, as the truth, in correction of their errors. The familiar antithesis of orthodoxy and heterodoxy appears here for the first time: the truth is whatever is believed by the Church and is based upon its traditions; error is whatever departs from the general belief

---

<sup>1</sup> 2 Tim. ii. 18; Tit. i. 14 sq.; 1 Tim. i. 4, 7, 17, ii. 4, 5, 6, iii. 16, iv. 3, 7, 10, vi. 4, 5, 16, 20.

and tradition of the community. One natural consequence of this principle of authority is that faith, which in Paul's view had been the subjective act of the surrender of the heart to Christ, acquires now a completely objective, dogmatic significance: it is sometimes soundness of belief, or submission to the form of teaching sanctioned by the Church; at others it is really identified with that teaching, becoming thus doctrinal belief<sup>1</sup> (*fides quæ creditur*), which already begins to be definitively fixed in formulæ as a *regula fidei*, after the manner of the creeds.<sup>2</sup> From this follows, as a further necessary consequence, that inasmuch as faith consists simply in a dogmatic assent to the doctrine of the Church, it can no longer of itself bring justification, but requires to be supplemented by love and other virtues;<sup>3</sup> further, that though at first the meritoriousness of "good works" is denied,<sup>4</sup> they acquire

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim. i. 4, 5, 19, ii. 7, iii. 9, iv. 1, 6, vi. 10, 21; Tit. i. 4.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Tim. iii. 16.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Tim. ii. 15, iv. 12, vi. 11; 2 Tim. ii. 22, iii. 10; Tit. ii. 2.

<sup>4</sup> Tit. iii. 5 sq.

ever greater significance and value, so that the first Epistle to Timothy is able to see in them a good foundation and degree of salvation.<sup>1</sup> As the primitive Pauline antithesis of faith and works has been thereby rendered meaningless, so the previous cardinal point of controversy between Paulinism and Judaism—the religious question as to the validity of the Law—has lost its interest when looked at from the standpoint of the Paulinism of the Church, and is simply treated as settled by the moral principle that the Law is necessary for the wicked but superfluous for the good.<sup>2</sup> Of the law of the spirit, however, which Paul had put in opposition to the law of the letter, not a word is now said. On the other hand, the Church is thrust the more prominently forward as “the pillar and basis of the truth,” “the firm foundation of God,” upon which the existence of Christianity as well as the salvation of individuals rests.<sup>3</sup> Paul had declared that Jesus Christ alone was the foundation laid for all;

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim. iii. 13, vi. 18, ii. 15.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Tim. i. 7 sq.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Tim. iii. 15; 2 Tim. ii. 19.

the Epistle to the Ephesians had added Apostles and Prophets; but now the Church is, without any reservation, made the foundation. And the Church derives its unity and stability no longer from the free spirit of the sons of God animating all its members equally, but from ecclesiastical offices, consecrated by special spiritual endowment, imparted by the sacramental ceremony of ordination. The constitution of the Church appears in the First Epistle to Timothy, the latest of the Deutero-Pauline Epistles, as already at that stage of development in which not only the Elders, or Presbyters, have formed themselves into a closed college, but the monarchical head of the Bishop begins already to rise from their midst; with the imposition of the hands of the Presbytery the charisma of the office is communicated to him (Timothy is meant to represent the Bishop).<sup>1</sup> Upon the Bishop rests the obligation to see that sound doctrine is maintained against heretical teachers; he also exercises discipline over the Presbyters; he has authority to

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim. iv. 14.



grant or to refuse (to sinners and the fallen) admission into the Church by the imposition of his hands.<sup>1</sup>

If in this last of the Letters written in Paul's name the evident aim appears to give the Church stability by means of organized ecclesiastical offices, and especially the Episcopate, a glance at the Epistles published in the honoured name of the martyr *Ignatius* by a later Paulinist enables us to see with what increased energy and success within a few years that endeavour to strengthen ecclesiastical authority by means of the Episcopate was prosecuted amid the Church's struggles with domestic and foreign foes. While in the first Epistle of Timothy we observe only the growing desire to distinguish the Bishop from the Presbyters, the distinction is an accomplished fact in the Ignatian Epistles. The Bishop is no longer *primus inter pares*, but his relation to the Presbyters is like that of God or Christ, whose place he occupies, to the Apostles, whose college is perpetuated in the col-

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim. i. 3, 18, iv. 6, ii. 16, v. 19, 20, 22.

lege of the Presbyters. The title to ecclesiastical offices is based on direct appointment to them by Christ and endowment with the Holy Spirit. The Bishop is the shepherd, under whose care alone the sheep are safe from the wolves (heretical teachers). Only they who go with the Bishop and the Presbyters can belong to God and Christ, for apart from them there is no Church. As Christ did nothing without the Father, so Christians ought to do nothing without the Bishops and Presbyters. He that honours the Bishop is honoured of God; he that does anything without the Bishop serves the Devil and defiles his conscience. No eucharist, baptism, or even marriage, is well-pleasing to God without the sanction of the Bishop.<sup>1</sup> Thus distinctly has the principle of the genuine Catholic hierarchy already reached a fully developed form: ecclesiastical offices intervene between God and man; on the relation of the believer to the priest depend his relation to God, the purity of his

---

<sup>1</sup> Ignat. *ad Magn.* vi. vii. ; *Trall.* iii. vii. ; *Philad.* i.—iii. ; *Smyrn.* viii. ix. ; *Polycarp*, v.

conscience, the acceptability of his worship and his moral action, the determination of his salvation or condemnation ! Still—what is most remarkable of all—with all this, pseudo-Ignatius claims to be a good Paulinist ; with the rigour of a Marcion he combats adherence to the Jewish Law as infatuation and wickedness, and, in opposition to Judaism, places, as the one inviolable authority of Christians, Jesus Christ, and his cross, and his death, and faith, by which he seeks to receive justification.<sup>1</sup> We perceive from this that while Catholicism retained the dogmatic form of Paulinism and continued to protest against the positive form of the Jewish Law, it substituted at the same time for the spirit of Paulinism the Jewish spirit of Legalism, for which the foundations of a strong citadel in the Roman Church were now laid in the new form of the legalistic system of ecclesiastical Catholicism.

No advance was made beyond this position throughout the Middle Ages. Nor was the theology of the great Church Father *Augustine* so

---

<sup>1</sup> Ignat. *ad Philad.* viii.

much a revival of Paulinism as a most thoroughgoing transformation of it into ecclesiastical Catholicism. Undoubtedly Augustine's nature had very close affinity to that of Paul, but in him we have the evangelical Paul Romanized. He shares Paul's profound sense of dependence on God, of the unconditionality of the Divine grace, without which he felt himself to be as powerless for good as he was wretched and reprobate. He had also experienced in his own history the tremendous contrariety of sin and grace, and had himself gone through the terrible conflict of the flesh and the spirit; after manifold errors in thought and life, in complete doubt of finding the truth and in despair of attaining to goodness, he had experienced in his own person the saving power of the gospel of the grace of God in Christ. And when once he had been taken possession of by this truth, Augustine made it, with the decisive thoroughness of strong natures such as his, the one absorbing idea of his whole life. As Paul had felt himself and the whole world crucified with Christ, and was thenceforth determined to know nothing else save Jesus Christ as crucified,

so Augustine, after his violent break with his past life, regarded everything belonging to natural humanity as worthless in comparison with the sole source of truth and goodness which had been opened up to him in the grace of Christ.

Sin and grace, these two poles of Pauline theology, were likewise the axes of the religious feeling and the theological thought of Augustine. And he, too, traced the roots of this antithesis, which he had experienced in the first instance in his own life, back to the beginning of the world's history, and, in fact, beyond the world into the mysterious darkness of the eternal decrees of Deity. If sin is such a terrible power as Augustine perceived it to be, a victory over which is more than man's strength is sufficient for, and can be gained by the grace of God alone, it cannot comprise merely the separate and casual deeds of individuals, but it is, as Augustine teaches with Paul, a universal despotic power, holding the entire race captive under its resistless sway, a fatal calamity inflicted on mankind. But since this moral condition cannot have been originally created by God, Augustine looks

upon it as the consequence of human guilt, as a punishment inflicted upon the whole human race for Adam's first offence. In these general ideas Augustine is at one with Paul; but in his further development of the consequences of the Fall, he goes far beyond his predecessor. According to his view, after the Fall the entire human race has become altogether a *massa perditionis*, absolutely ruled by ungodly selfishness and sensual desires, free only to do evil, without any power to do good, so that even the virtues of the Heathen are but splendid vices. If with this excessively pessimistic estimate of the actual condition of mankind, Augustine has already gone far beyond Paul, this is still more the case when he teaches the transference of the guilt of Adam to the race in such a manner that even infants are doomed to eternal damnation in hell simply on account of original sin, as far as they are not saved by grace through baptism. In support of this cruel theory, Augustine appeals to Rom. v. 12, a passage which really teaches nothing of the kind, Paul's argument being simply that with the universality of sin physical death likewise

extended to all men, because all (personally) sinned—an argument, therefore, which actually excludes the Augustinian doctrine of original sin. Augustine completely twisted the meaning of this passage by the false translation, *in quo omnes peccaverunt*, and his inference therefrom that, on the ground of their being virtually included in their first parent, all men shared his sin and are justly condemned on that account. The foundation of this strange theory is not, however, to be found merely in a misunderstood passage of Scripture; the falsely interpreted text only served Augustine as the substruction of a theory previously adopted, the real reasons for which must be sought, firstly, in the depth and intensity of his sense of sin—a consequence not less of his temperament than of his personal history; secondly, however, and chiefly, in ecclesiastical motives, namely, the demonstration of the absolute necessity of the Church's means of grace, particularly baptism.

And this is the point where the Augustinian theory deviates furthest from the Pauline. According to Paul, grace was the love of God revealed in

Christ, which, made known through the Gospel, apprehended by faith and borne witness to in the heart by the holy spirit of adoption, unites the believer *directly* with God, and thereby delivers him from all human thralldom. Augustine, on the contrary, conceives of grace as so completely restricted to the channel of the sacramental ceremonies of the Church—and of the Roman Catholic Church represented by the clergy—that salvation, as well as the moral worth of men, is made to depend unconditionally on membership in this Church and obedience to its authority. As Augustine maintains, everything may be had outside the Church save salvation; and although a man supposes he leads a good life, he will nevertheless, for the one crime of separation from the Church, not obtain salvation, but the wrath of God remains upon him. According to Augustine, the Church is so exclusively in possession of the whole truth, human reason is since the Fall so totally depraved, that all criticism of the doctrine of the Church is from the very first quite out of the question, and nothing remains for us but an unconditional subjection to its authority, as professedly



rendered sacred by Apostolic tradition. And since the Church is identified with the *civitas Dei*, which is destined in the Divine counsels to triumph over the states of the world, she extends her royal prerogative over the entire life of Christians; secular institutions receive from her their divine sanction and moral worth; the State is especially under the obligation to lend its strong arm to her for the punishment and subjugation of her enemies—*cogite intrare!* By his calamitous misinterpretation of this passage of Scripture with reference to the employment of the compulsory power of the State, in reply to the Donatists, Augustine laid the foundation of the enthrallment of men's minds for a thousand years to the hierarchy, a condition the most direct opposite of the freedom of the children of God to which we are called according to Paul's gospel.

This ecclesiastical slavery is further promoted in Augustine's system by that aspect of the doctrine of grace which was intended in Paul's thought to constitute the firmest support of personal religious assurance and freedom—the doctrine of predestina-

tion. Paul had based the assurance of Christians, with its superiority to all the vicissitudes of the world and time, on the fact that they are conscious of being the objects of a Divine love which infallibly brings those whom it has once chosen and predestined to salvation to the destination of heavenly blessedness (Rom. viii. 29, 30). The idea of predestination is here nothing else than the theological expression of the immediate religious consciousness of enjoying the favour of God, a consciousness which derives its certainty from the witness of the Spirit felt within the heart (viii. 16), and for that reason involves deliverance from all fear of the world and man, for "if God is for us, who can be against us?" (viii. 31). But in Augustine's system, the idea of predestination is intended, on the contrary, to serve the purpose of keeping the Christian in perpetual uncertainty as to his salvation, of damping the happy assurance (or "pride," as Augustine terms it) of the possession of the Divine favour, and of compelling him, as thus deprived of all inward support, to take refuge in the ecclesiastical ordinances of salvation. As, according to

Augustine, grace is applied only externally by the agency of ecclesiastical functions, and has not its roots in our own inner being or its channel in our personal volition (which, indeed, is in his view free only to choose the evil), it cannot truly enter into our proper nature so as to become our own actual life, but remains an incomprehensible mystery, hidden in the Divine counsels, before which we can only prostrate ourselves in awful fear and resignation. This is the habit of thought of Catholic Christianity. According to it men cling to the mediation of the Church, because they are unable to find God in their own souls, or to hear within their own hearts His infallible revelations; they must try to gain salvation by external works according to the direction of the Church, because they are unable to obtain it by the inward action of personal surrender to God. Thus the religion of the Spirit is converted into a system of ceremonial observances.

At the same time, the Augustinian doctrine of predestination, the roots of which were in Paulinism, retained all along an element of affinity to

the latter, and might therefore, under favourable conditions, some day conduct to a position the exact opposite of ecclesiastical Augustinianism. According to Augustine, the doctrine of predestination was meant to keep men in uncertainty as to their salvation and thereby in a condition of dependence on the Church. But suppose the devout soul in its feeling of the love of God has become conscious of its election, must not this very consciousness serve to liberate it from dependence on the Church? Will not the function of the Church as the channel of salvation lose its value and importance in proportion as stress is laid on personal experience of Divine grace, which, in more profoundly religious natures particularly, is usually combined with the immediate certainty of its being a living reality? For this reason we need not be surprised that the more profound and independent religious spirits of later times took the Augustinian doctrines of grace as their starting-point, and used them as a means of delivering themselves from the ban of the Augustinian doctrine of the Church, and of a return, beyond Catholicism, to Paulinism and its gospel of the freedom of the sons of God.

This was done for the first time in a thorough manner by the bold Oxford reformer, *John Wiclif*, who converted the Pauline and Augustinian doctrine of predestination into a battering-ram for shaking the very foundation of the Catholic system—priestly absolution. One of his most important principles was, that neither the Pope, nor even the Lord Jesus Christ, can grant dispensation or indulgence otherwise than as the Deity has determined from all eternity by righteous decree; furthermore, that it is blasphemous to maintain that deserts can, like accidental predicates, be transferred from one subject to another, a supposition upon which the Catholic doctrine of a *thesaurus* of supererogatory merits, and its administration by the clergy, is founded. Wiclif energetically exhorts the soldiers of Christ to reject such fictions of the Prince of darkness, which only serve to befool the Church, and to put on Jesus Christ.<sup>1</sup> Huss took up Wiclif's ideas again. Starting from the conception of the Church as the collective body of the predestinated, he drew the inference that Papal indulgences were of uncertain value, since

---

<sup>1</sup> *Triialogus*, iv. 32.

it could not be known of any man, not even of the Pope himself, whether he belonged to the number of the predestinated or not, and whether his indulgences were in conformity with or opposed to the eternal decrees of God. As Paul had proved the invalidity of the Law by means of the Law, so ecclesiastical Augustinianism is assailed by Wiclif and Huss with Augustine's weapons. Generally speaking, it is true that controversies of this class are too exclusively occupied with scholastic abstractions, and the use made of the doctrine of predestination is confined too much to the region of theological dogma, and has too little intimate connection with the inner religious consciousness, to exert a quickening and renewing influence upon the hearts of the people.

It was *Luther* in whom the spirit of Paulinism first re-appeared in all its power, successfully bursting the fetters of Catholicism, by which it had been held bound for fourteen hundred years. How may men get rid of their sins and be righteous? This cardinal point of the doctrine of Paul was the burning question of Luther's life, the settlement of

which he had vainly sought in the ecclesiastical religion of works, and at length, like Paul, found in faith in Christ the Reconciler. It was not, as in the case of Augustine, grievous sins of unrestrained passion which oppressed Luther's conscience; his life had been as blameless, according to human judgment, as Paul's pre-Christian life under the Law. What drove Luther into a monastery, and tormented him there amid all his monastic exercises, was the burning desire of his devout heart for peace and reconciliation with God, which, do what he might, was perpetually frustrated by the profound feeling of his tender conscience that the chasm between the holy God and sinful man could not be got over by any resolves and efforts on his part. As Luther had experienced in himself more deeply than any one else since Paul the insufficiency of his own righteousness, he likewise made righteousness by faith the watchword of his life more absolutely than any one after Paul. And, unlike Augustine, Luther did not conceive justifying grace as exclusively connected with the agency of the visible Church and her sacerdotal functions, but, like Paul,

beheld it directly in Christ as the reflection of the Divine love, and therefore embraced it directly by faith in Christ; in the surrender of his heart to the Saviour he became so immediately assured of the love of God and of peace with Him, that nothing could any more come to separate him and his God. In Luther's view, therefore, grace is no longer, as in Augustine's, a blessing deposited in the Church only, and, in relation to the consciousness of the individual, something always external and accordingly problematic, but manifests itself as the inward experience of the human soul, as its own new spirit of adoption. But where the spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty. Therefore grace, which, according to Augustine, enchained men to the Church, became for Luther the hammer with which he broke in pieces all such human fetters and triumphantly recovered the lost freedom of the Christian man. The word of Paul to the Galatians, "For freedom Christ has made us free; stand fast, therefore, and be not entangled again in a yoke of bondage!" was first understood again in its full significance by Luther, and proclaimed to enslaved



Christendom as the message of Divine deliverance. At this trumpet-blast all the walls of that spiritual dungeon fell, by means of which the Romish hierarchy had set up and established its sway over men's consciences and the life of society. The wall of separation between the clergy and the laity disappeared before the general priesthood of all believers; the tyranny over consciences exercised in the confessional was broken by the free access of all believers to the grace wherein we stand; the gates of the monasteries were thrown open and their captives set free, and parsonages grew up and became the consecrated scenes of godly family bliss and pure manners, as models and sources of blessing to countless numbers.

And it is at this point where Luther advanced not merely beyond Augustine, but beyond Paul also, or rather that he carried out the Pauline principle, "all things are yours," more thoroughly than the Apostle himself. For Paul the world had been crucified in Christ, not merely in the sense that sinful worldly desires had lost their charm for him, but also in the sense that the social life of the

earth seemed to be without value and importance in view of the immediate appearance of the celestial Christ, to which the eager hope of all Christians was directed. The time, Paul says, is short; therefore they who have wives must be as though they had none, and it is better to remain unmarried, to be in readiness for the coming Lord. This early Christian contrast between the present world and the expected Messianic kingdom became subsequently in Catholicism an opposition between the world and the Church, and secular and spiritual life,—an opposition which was not less prejudicial to the true appreciation of ordinary natural life than favourable to the despotic rule of society by the hierarchy. Luther was the first to get rid of this dualism, which dominated the whole of Christendom down to his time, and to recognize the moral life of Christians as one harmonious whole, that is, as the organic development of faith working by love. Everything that proceeds from this motive, not excepting labour in the humblest vocation, is also well-pleasing to God, a true act of worship of positive value, and indeed of much higher value than

the unproductive ascetic life of the clergy. The married state particularly is in Luther's estimation so far from being merely a concession to human weakness, and a lower state than the unmarried, as the Catholic Church had taught with Paul and Augustine, that, on the contrary, it "ought a hundred times more justly to be called spiritual than the monastic state," for it is an excellent means of educating man in faith, patience and humility, for practising obedience in the fulfilment of daily duties, and in the joint bearing of the cross. Thus it was by Luther that the kingdom of Christ was for the first time transferred from an anti-natural transcendental world—whether eschatological or ecclesiastical—into the natural world of the present earthly life, and thus made the guiding and moralizing power in all spheres of human existence. It was thereby that the saying of Jesus regarding the leaven and the mustard-seed was completely fulfilled, and the utterance of Paul, "The kingdom of God is righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit: whoever serveth Christ herein is well-pleasing to God and approved of men" (Rom. xiv. 17).

While, however, Luther unquestionably carried out the ethical side of the Pauline principle more completely than Paul himself, as respects its theological side he did not advance beyond the doctrinal system which proceeded from Paulinism and was afterwards mixed with Augustinian, Anselmian and other medieval elements. With Augustine he teaches the total depravity of mankind through Adam's Fall, the want of all freedom in the human will to choose the good, the damnation of all the unbaptized on account of original sin, and the necessity of the baptism of infants for salvation, a belief which can hardly be made to accord with his Pauline doctrine of justification by faith. And, going beyond Augustine even, he taught the real presence of the body of Christ in the sacrament of the Lord's Supper, and in conjunction therewith the ubiquity of Christ in his human combined with the divine nature, of which there is as little to be found in Paul's writings as of the Athanasian doctrine of the Trinity, which Luther likewise maintained as an article of faith. In his doctrine of the Atonement he followed Anselm, who had given a

coarser form to the Pauline theory of expiation in the sense of the Catholic doctrine of the supererogatory and transferable merits of the saints; but the very theory of the meritorious satisfaction of Christ, which was in Anselm's system both a natural consequence and again a confirmation of the merits of the saints and the Church, was used by Luther, on the contrary, to set aside the merits of the saints and the whole system of meritorious works. He sought accordingly to refute the Catholic idea of righteousness by works from the position of the Catholic doctrine of Atonement, just as Paul had set aside the religion of the Law from the standpoint of the Law. In neither case are we able to call in question the propriety, or indeed the historical necessity, of such a line of procedure; at the same time we cannot shut our eyes to the great difficulties which arise for thoughtful minds from this employment of conceptions belonging peculiarly to the antiquated standpoint in establishing and formulating the truth of the new principle. The contradictions and theoretical stumbling-blocks which are the inevitable consequences of this line

of procedure were probably felt more painfully by Luther than by Paul; for that very reason he repudiated more rudely than almost any one before his day the right of the reason to judge critically in matters of faith, and demanded its unconditional submission to the authority of the sacred Scriptures. The difficulty, however, was not thus got over, but only increased; for his own action was in real and marked contradiction to his principle of the repudiation of the reason and its right of free inquiry. Not only had he accorded to sound reason the amplest scope in his polemic with Catholic traditions, but he bowed to the authority of the word of Scripture only so far as it harmonized with his own religious convictions; when that was not the case, he did not scruple himself, it is well known, to pass the freest opinions, not only upon points of detail, but also upon entire books of the Bible. In fact, in this respect Luther followed in the footsteps of Paul, inasmuch as the latter likewise acknowledged *in thesi* the literal authority of the word of God as written in the Law, but *in praxi* took the greatest liberties in his application and interpretation of the written word

in favour of his own Christian view of the abrogation of the Law. Common to both religious heroes was, therefore, the limitation imposed upon them by their historical position, that they could give didactic expression to the independent truth of which they were the original discoverers only through the inadequate and perishable forms of a traditional theology, by the normal authority of which they still felt themselves bound, whilst as regards the contents of their faith they had advanced beyond it: their treasure of divine truth they possessed in earthen vessels. It appears, however, to be the tragical lot of mankind, that of the great performances of their historical heroes it is always the limited and transient form rather than the eternal ideal substance which in the first instance receives chief attention. As we saw above that in ecclesiastical Catholicism the dogmatic form of Paulinism was preserved deprived of its evangelical spirit, so at the Reformation a similar fate befel revived Paulinism in the new scholasticism of orthodox Protestantism.

There was in this respect, however, an essential difference. When once the Pauline principle of

unfettered and inward faith had been put into the centre of the theology of the Church, it could not be again pushed aside; the Protestant Christian could not wholly renounce his right to derive the gospel directly from its first source independently of all ecclesiastical and traditional formularies and ordinances, and to test all outward testimonies by the inward witness of the Spirit of God. In proportion as the wants of the religious heart remained unsupplied by the cold formalism of dogmatic theology, and the intellect was vainly tortured in the effort to remove its contradictions, the more necessary in the interest of both was the reaction of the free Protestant spirit against the new ecclesiastical Law. This reaction took place in the form of German Pietism and English Methodism in response to emotional needs, and in the form of English Deism and German Rationalism to meet the necessities of the reason. The relation these movements held to Paulinism was various. While Methodism and Pietism (particularly of the Moravian Brethren) found in Pauline mystical faith and love of the Saviour a healing and rejuvenating spring for the paralyzed religious life, Rationalism for the



most part took too great offence at the dogmatic integument of Paulinism in the coarse form of orthodox teaching, to be able to devote to it unprejudiced attention. Still noteworthy exceptions were not altogether wanting, amongst whom we may discover the predecessors of the modern Tübingen school. To their number belongs especially the English Freethinker *Thomas Morgan*, who is entitled to the honour of being the first since Marcion's time to perceive the profound difference between the legalistic national Jewish Christianity of the earlier Apostles and the universalistic Christianity of Paul, and to insist emphatically on the originality of the latter. He extols Paul as "the great free-thinker of his age, and the brave defender of Reason against Authority," who as a solitary man, in the long conflict with the Jewish and Jewish-Christian opposition, steadily maintained his position and never admitted the religious obligation of the Mosaic Law.<sup>1</sup> Morgan also made numerous and excellent observa-

---

<sup>1</sup> In his "Moral Philosopher, in a Dialogue between Philaethes, a Christian Deist, and Theophanes, a Christian Jew" (1737—1740). Comp. the interesting article of David Patrick in the *Theological Review*, Oct. 1877, pp. 562 sq.

tions on the gradual fusion of the two hostile parties in the unity of the Catholic Church, on the effects of Jewish Christianity traceable in the hierarchical character of that Church, on the Roman legend of Peter, and on the strength acquired by the Episcopate in the struggle with Gnosticism. It cannot, however, be denied that Morgan suffered himself to be misled by his sympathy with the Apostle of freedom so as to make him too much like a modern, and in attention to the anti-Judaic to overlook the Jewish features of Paul's thought; still the boldness and sagacity of his critical observations, which were a century in advance of his time, deserve every acknowledgment. Whilst the criticism of Morgan is based rather upon bold intuition than exact exegetical and historical inquiry, *Semler*, the "Father of German Rationalism," was the first to apply the method of historical criticism to the study of the Bible, and by its means to quicken the sight for the discovery of the exact differences between the primitive Christian parties; yet his hints attracted for a long time but little notice. It was the great scholar *Ferdinand Christian Baur*,

distinguished equally for his learning, his critical acumen and his constructive genius, who first succeeded in for ever scattering the thick mists of traditional illusion which had settled over the early years of our religion, and in obtaining a connected and critically established view of the actual development of primitive Christianity, and especially of the decisive part Paul took therein. However much there may be in the results of his labours to correct in detail, at all events they supply the solid groundwork upon which the scientific examination of primitive Christianity has been since building.

I have now reached the conclusion of the historical task proposed to me. History, however, ought to be an instructress helping us to understand the present and the future. For that reason, you may justly look for an answer to the question, What significance has Paulinism with regard to the development of Christianity in the present and future? On this question I can give my view with the greater brevity as the answer to it is really contained in what has already been said. We have repeatedly

seen that wherever the spirit of Paulinism made itself felt, it was an influence bringing freedom and inward depth to the religious life, delivering men from all externalities, and uniting them directly with God: this constitutes the specifically Christian and permanent element of Paulinism. But we have also seen that from the very first Paulinism assumed a dogmatic form, which, taken in the first instance from Jewish elements and afterwards extended and developed into a dogmatic system by Alexandrine Gnosticism, was constituted by the Church an obligatory law of belief and tended growingly to become an impeding fetter and an oppressive yoke to the religious spirit: this forms the frail earthen vessel containing the precious treasure of the Pauline gospel. The dissimilarity which has from the very first until now marked the views taken of Paulinism is explained by this two-fold aspect of it. Some looked mainly at its valuable religious contents, and on their account regarded its dogmatic form as an inalienable truth invested with binding authority, but they thereby perverted the Pauline gospel of the freedom of the sons of God into an enslaving

letter. Others, on the contrary, took the greater offence at this perishable form the more it was pressed upon them with the claim of possessing infallible and indisputable authority; and being unable to distinguish between it and its spiritual contents, they rejected Paulinism altogether, and demanded a return to Christianity anterior to Paul, while their conception of the latter was nevertheless unconsciously influenced by the idealizing spirit of Paulinism. From both these mistakes a critical and historical study of the Bible may preserve us, teaching us, as it does, to distinguish between the spirit and the letter, the permanent and the transient. The more fully this distinction is made a part of the general consciousness of theologians and churches, the easier will it be for the Church of the present age to accomplish a perpetual reformation of its forms of doctrine by means of the spirit of Paulinism.

In the performance of this pressing task, we may take the Apostle Paul himself as our model. As he treated the words of the Old Testament, notwithstanding his great reverence of it, with the supreme freedom of the religious spirit, which is convinced

that the truth inwardly revealed to it must be likewise the deepest meaning and true significance of every historical revelation, hidden indeed from the view of ordinary men, but disclosed to the more penetrating glance of the spiritual man (2 Cor. iii. 6—17), so we on the same principle may adopt the same line of procedure with regard to the letter of the Pauline and the ecclesiastical systems of doctrine. Since we have learnt from Paul that *Christ* has called us to freedom, and that the spiritual man has the right and the duty to judge and to prove all things,<sup>1</sup> we will not put ourselves again under the servile yoke of the letter, which has binding authority for those under age only, and not for the free sons of God. On the other hand, as we know that all things are lawful for us but all things are not expedient, and that knowledge puffeth up but love edifieth,<sup>2</sup> we will not with violent hands precipitately break up or cast away the forms in which the Apostles and Prophets deposited for Christendom the religious

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. ii. 15; 1 Thess. v. 21.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. vi. 12, viii. 1.

treasure of the gospel, forms in which the founders of our Protestant churches confessed their faith, and to which the hearts of countless numbers of Christians are still deeply attached. What should prevent us from interpreting and applying the dogmas, which can no longer be appropriated by us in their literal meaning, as valuable symbols of religious and moral truths? Suppose, for instance, we find it difficult to harmonize the doctrine of Adam's Fall and Christ's Atonement with our ideas of the development of mankind and the educating revelation of God. What should prevent our interpreting these doctrines as symbols of the two opposing powers the struggle of which extends through the entire human race—the selfish love of the natural man, which is the root of all evil, and the self-denying love of man in the image of God, which procures the weal of all by unselfish sacrifice, and by lowly service obtains triumphant dominion? Or if, perhaps, we feel it difficult to harmonize the idea of a personal descent of Christ from heaven, in the past or in the future, with our conception of the universe and man, what can forbid us to find therein

the symbol of the elevated truth, that the ideal of man as the child of God had its eternal ground in the will of God, and was embodied in the fulness of time in Jesus Christ as the first-born among many brethren, whilst it is also being continually embodied in all those who embrace it in faith and make it a living reality in their hearts and lives? Would our Christian faith in the revelation of the Son of God in the flesh lose any of its elevating power if we conceived the miracle of the Incarnation as not confined to the solitary past appearance of Jesus on the earth, but understood it of the perpetual revelation of the Divine Spirit in the miraculous transformation of men from sinful children of Adam into holy children of God? Or need our hope of Christ's second coming lose any of its consoling virtue if we no longer looked upon it as a single marvellous future event of which we are hardly competent to form any conception, but understood it as a symbol of the universal destination of humanity to grow into the unity of the "body of Christ," that is, the organic association of the children of God, who are animated by the one spirit of the love of



God, in whose midst, therefore, the Lord, who is spirit, is always occupied in his triumphant coming?

But enough of these examples: which are intended only to indicate how everywhere the letter of Pauline and ecclesiastical theology may be regarded as the transparent covering of sublime truths, which it is our just right and our sacred duty more and more clearly to discover, to bring forth in ever greater purity, and to use with increasing freedom for the edification of our modern Christian churches. For the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.

# A Catalogue

of

## Williams & Norgate's Publications

---

### Divisions of the Catalogue

	PAGE
I. THEOLOGY . . . . .	3
II. PHILOSOPHY . . . . .	29
III. ORIENTAL LANGUAGES, LITERATURE, AND HISTORY	34
IV. PHILOLOGY, MODERN LANGUAGES . . . . .	39
V. SCIENCE, MEDICINE, CHEMISTRY, ETC. . . . .	46
VI. BIOGRAPHY, ARCHÆOLOGY, LITERATURE, MIS- CELLANEOUS . . . . .	56

*FULL INDEX OVER PAGE*

---

London  
Williams & Norgate  
14 Henrietta Street, Covent Garden, W.C.

# INDEX.

- Abyssinia**, *Shikab al Din*, 37.  
**Alcyonium**, *Liverpool Marine Biol. C. Mems.*, 50.  
**Algæ**, *Cooke*, 47.  
**America**, Creation Myths of, *Curtin*, 57.  
**Americans**, The, *Münsterberg*, 30.  
**Anarchy and Law**, *Brewster*, 29.  
**Anatomy**, *Cleland*, 47; *Cunningham Memoirs*, 48; *Lockwood*, 51.  
**Anthropology**, Prehistoric, *Avebury*, 56; *Engelhardt*, 57; *Laing*, 59.  
     Evolution of Religion, *Farnell*, 57.  
**Apocalypse**, *Bleek*, 8; *Clark*, 16.  
**Apostles and Apostolic Times**, *Dobschütz*, 4;  
     *Hausrath*, 18; *Weizsäcker*, 7; *Zeller*, 9.  
     Statutes of, edit. G. Homer, 26.  
**Apostolic Succession**, *Clark*, 16.  
**Arabic Grammar**, *Socin*, 37.  
     Poetry, *Faizullah Bhai*, 35; *Lyall*, 35;  
     *Noldeke*, 36.  
**Ascidia**, *Liverpool Marine Biol. Mems.*, 50.  
**Assyrian**, Dictionary, *Muss-Arnolt*, 36, *Norris*, 36.  
     Grammar, *Delitzsch*, 34.  
     Language, *Delitzsch*, 34.  
**Assyriology**, *Brown*, 56; *Delitzsch*, 10, 34;  
     *Evans*, 35; *Sayce*, 13; *Schrader*, 9.  
**Astigmatic Tests**, *Pray*, 52; *Snellen*, 54.  
**Astronomy**, *Cunningham Mems.*, V., 48; *Memoirs of Roy. Astronom. Soc.*, 62.  
**Augustine**, St., Confessions of, *Harnack*, 18.  
**Babylonia**, see *Assyriology*.  
**Belief**, Religious, *Upton*, 15.  
**Beneficence**, Negative and Positive, *Spencer*,  
     Principles of Ethics, II., 31.  
**Bible**, 16.  
     See also *Testament*.  
     Beliefs about, *Savage*, 25.  
     *Hebrew Texts*, 19.  
     History of Text, *Weir*, 27.  
     Plants, *Henslow*, 19.  
     Problems, *Cheyne*, 12.  
**Bibliography**, *Bibliographical Register*, 56.  
**Biology**, *Bastian*, 46; *Liverpool Marine Biol. Mems.*, 50; *Spencer*, 31.  
**Botany**, *Bentham and Hooker*, 46; *Church*, 47;  
     *Cooke*, 47; *Grevillea*, 49; *Jour. of the Linnean Soc.*, 49; *Prior*, 52.  
**Brain**, *Cunningham Mems.*, VII, 48.  
**Buddha**, **Buddhism**, *David*, 14, *Hardy*, 35;  
     *Oldenberg*, 36.  
**Calculus**, *Harnack*, 49.  
**Canons of Athanasius**, *Text & Trans. Soc.*, 38.  
**Cardium**, *Liverpool Marine Biol. Mems.*, 50.  
**Celtic**, see also *Irish*.  
     *Stokes*, 43; *Sullivan*, 44.  
     Heathendom, *Rhys*, 15.  
**Ceremonial Institutions**, *Spencer*, *Princ. of Sociology*, II., 31.  
**Chaldee**, Grammar, *Turpie*, 38.  
     Lexicon, *Fuerst*, 35.  
**Chemistry**, *Berzelius*, 46; *Dittmar*, 48; *Farnaday*, 49; *Van't Hoff*, 49.  
     Hindu, *Ray*, 52.  
**Christ**, Life of, *Keim*, 8.  
     No Product of Evolution, *Henslow*, 19.  
     Study of, *Robinson*, 24.  
     Teaching of, *Harnack*, 6, 11.  
     The Universal, *Beard*, 16.  
     Early Christian Conception of, *Pfleiderer*, 13, 23.  
**Christianity**, Evolution of, *Gill*, 18.  
     History of, *Baur*, 8; *Dobschütz*, 4; *Harnack*, 6, 11, 18; *Hausrath*, 8, 19; *Johnson*, 20;  
     *Mackay*, 22; *Wernle*, 4.  
     in Talmud, *Herford*, 19.  
     Liberal, *Réville*, 11.  
     Roots of, *Martineau*, 22.  
     Simplest Form of, *Diamond*, 14.  
     Spread of, *Harnack*, 3.  
     What is? *Harnack*, 6, 11.  
**Church**, Catholic, *Renan*, 14.  
     Christian, *Baur*, 8; *Clark*, 16; *Dobschütz*, 4;  
     *Hatch*, 14; *Wernle*, 4.  
     Coming, *Hunter*, 20.  
     Civic, *Palathy*, *Hunter*, 20.  
**Codex Palatino-Vaticanus**, *Todd Lectures*, III., 44.  
**Codium**, *Liverpool Marine Biol. Mems.*, 51.  
**Coleoptera**, *Murray*, 52.  
**Communion of Christian with God**, *Herrmann*, 6, 19.  
**Comte**, *Spencer*, 32.  
**Constellations**, Primitive, *Brown*, 56.  
**Cornish**, *Stokes*, 43.  
**Creed**, *Christian*, 16.  
**Crown Theological Library**, 10.  
**Cuneiform**, Inscriptions, *Schrader*, 9.  
**Daniel and His Prophecies**, *C. H. H. Wright*, 28.  
     Critical Commentary on, *C. H. H. Wright*, 28.  
**Danish Dictionary**, *Roseng*, 43.  
**Darwinism**, *Schurman*, 30.  
**Denmark**, *Engelhardt*, 57.  
**Doctrine and Principle**, *Beeby*, 16.  
**Dogma**, History of, *Harnack*, 5.  
     of Virgin Birth, *Lobstein*, 10.  
**Domestic Institutions**, *Spencer*, *Princ. of Sociology*, I., 31.  
**Duck Tribes**, Morphology of, *Cunningham Mems.*, VI., 48.  
**Dutch**, Cape, *Oordt*, 43; *Werner*, 45.  
**Dynamics**, *Cunningham Mems.*, IV., 48.  
     Chemical, *Van't Hoff*, 49.  
**Ecclesiastes**, *Taylor*, 26.  
**Ecclesiastical Institutions**, *Spencer*, *Princ. of Sociology*, III., 31, 32.  
     of Holland, *Wicksteed*, 27.  
**Echinus**, *Liverpool Marine Biol. Mems.*, 50.

# INDEX—Continued.

- Economy**, Political, *Machensie*, 30.  
**Education**, *Herbert*, 57; *Lodge*, 42; *Spencer*, 32.  
**Educational Works**, see Special Catalogue.  
**Egypt**, Religion of, *Renouf*, 15.  
**Egyptian Grammar**, *Erman*, 35.  
**Enoch**, Book of, *Gill*, 18.  
**Epidemiology**, *Trans. of Epidemiolog. Soc.*, 55.  
**Episioctic Lymphangitis**, Treatise on, *Pallin*, 52.  
**Ethics**, and Religion, *Martineau*, 22.  
     Data of, *Spencer*, Principles of E., I., 31.  
     Induction of, *Spencer*, Principles of E., I., 31.  
     Kantian, *Schurman*, 30.  
     of Evolution, *Schurman*, 30.  
     of Individual Life, *Spencer*, Princ. of E., I., 31.  
     of Reason, *Laurie*, 29.  
     Principles of, *Spencer*, 31.  
**Ethnology**, *Cunningham Mems.*, X., 48.  
**Evolution**, *Spencer*, 31, 32.  
     of the Idea of God, *D'Alviella*, 14.  
     of Religious Thought, *D'Alviella*, 15.  
**Exodus**, *Hoerning*, 20.  
**Ezekiel**, *Mosheh ben Shesheth*, 22.  
**Faith**, *Herrmann*, 12; *Rix*, 24; *Wimmer*, 27.  
**Fisheries**, British, *Johnstone*, 49.  
**Flinders Petrie Papyri**, *Cunningham Mems.*, VIII., IX., 48.  
**Libra of Edinburgh**, *Sonntag*, 54.  
**French**, *Boile*, 40; *Delbos*, 41; *Eugène*, 41; *Hugo*, 41, 42; *Roget*, 43; also Special Education Catalogue.  
     Literature, *Roget*, 43.  
     Novels, *Army Series*, 39.  
**Fungi**, *Cooke*, 47; *Grevillea*, 49.  
**Genera Plantarum**, *Bentham and Hooker*, 46.  
**Genesis**, *Hebrew Texts*, 19, 35; *Wright*, C. H. H., 28.  
**Geography**, Ancient, *Kiepert*, 58.  
**Geometry**, *Spencer*, W. G., 54.  
**German Literature**, *Nibelungenlied*, 42; *Phillipps*, 43.  
     Novels, *Army Series*, 39.  
**Germany**, *Marcks*, 59.  
**God**, Idea of, *D'Alviella*, 14.  
**Gospel**, First, *Plain Commentary*, 23.  
     Fourth, *Drummond*, 17; *Taylor*, 26.  
     Lost and Hostile, *Gould*, 18.  
     Old and New Certainty, *Robinson*, 24.  
**Greek**, Modern, *Zompoldes*, 45.  
**Gymnastics**, Medical, *Schreber*, 54.  
**Health**, *Herbert*, 49.  
**Hebrew**, Biblical, *Kennedy*, 35.  
     Language, *Delitsch*, 34.  
     Lexicon, *Fuerst*, 35.  
     New School of Poets, *Albrecht*, 36.  
     Scriptures, *Sharpe*, 25.  
     Story, *Peters*, 23.  
     Synonyms, *Kennedy*, 35.  
     Text of O.T., *Weir*, 27.  
     Texts, 19, 35.  
**Hebrews**, History of, *Kittel*, 6; *Peters*, 12; *Sharpe*, 25.  
     Religion of, *Kuenen*, 9; *Montefiore*, 14.  
**Heterogenesis**, *Bastian*, 46.  
**Hibbert Lectures**, 14, 15.  
**Hygiene**: How to Live, *Caton*, 47.  
**Hymns**, *Jones*, 20.  
**Icelandic**, *Lilja*, 42; *Viga Glams Saga*, 44.  
     Dictionary, *Zoega*, 45.  
     Grammar, *Baydon*, 40.  
**Individualism**, *Spencer*, Man v. State, 32.  
**Irish**, *Atkinson*, 40; *Book of Ballymote*, 40; *Book of Leinster*, 41; *Hogan*, 41; *Leabhar Breac*, 42; *Leabhar na h-Uidhri*, 42; *O'Grady*, 43; *Stokes*, 43; *Todd Lectures*, 44; *Yellow Book of Lecan*, 45.  
**Isaiah**, *Dietrich*, 34; *Hebrew Texts*, 19, 35.  
**Israel**, History of, *Kittel*, 6; *Peters*, 23; *Sharpe*, 25.  
     Religion of, *Kuenen*, 9.  
     in Egypt, *Wright*, G. H. B., 28.  
**Jeremiah**, *Mosheh ben Shesheth*, 22.  
**Jesus**, *Keim*, 8.  
     The Real, *Vickers*, 27.  
     Times of, *Hausrath*, 8.  
     See also Christ.  
**Job**, Book of, *Ewald*, 8; *Hebrew Text*, 19, 35; *Wright*, G. H. B., 28.  
     Rabbinical Comment. on, *Text & Trans. Soc.* 38.  
**Justice**, *Spencer*, Princ. of Ethics, II, 31, 32.  
**Kant**, *Schurman*, 30.  
**Kindergarten**, *Goldammer*, 57.  
**Knowledge**, Evolution of, *Perrin*, 30.  
**Labour**, *Harrison*, 57; *Schloss*, 59; *Vynne*, 60.  
**Leabhar Breac**, 42; *Atkinson*, 40; *Hogan*, 41.  
**Leprosy**, *Abraham*, 46.  
**Life**, and Matter, *Lodge*, 21.  
**Lives of the Saints**, *Hogan*, 41.  
**Logarithms**, *Sang*, 53; *Schroem*, 54; *Vega*, 55.  
**London Library Catalogue**, 57.  
**Lumbar Curve**, *Cunningham Mems.*, II., 48.  
**Mahabharata**, *Sorensen*, 37.  
**Malaria**, *Annett*, 46; *Boyce*, 47; *Dutton*, 48; *Mems. of Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine*, 51; *Ross*, 55; *Stephens*, 55.  
**Maori**, Dictionary, *Williams*, 45.  
     Manual, *Maori*, 42.  
**Materialism**, *Martineau*, 22.  
**Mathematics**, *Harnack*, 49; *Spencer*, 54.  
     See also Logarithms.  
**Mediæval Thought**, *Pool*, 23.  
**Mesca Ulad**, *Todd Lectures*, I., 44.  
**Metaphysics**, *Laurie*, 29.  
**Mexico**, Religions of, *Réville*, 15.  
**Micah**, Book of, *Taylor*, 26.  
**Microscopy**, *Journal of the Roy. Micro. Soc.*, 50; *Journal of the Quekett Micro. Club*, 50.  
**Midrash**, Christianity in, *Herford*, 19.  
**Mineral Systems**, *Chapman*, 47.  
**Monasticism**, *Harnack*, 18.  
**Mosquitoes**, *Mems. of Liverpool School of Trop. Medicine*, 51.  
**Mythology**, American, *Curtin*, 57.  
     Greek, *Brown*, 56; *St Clair*, 59.  
     Northern, *Stephens*, 60.  
**Myxomycetes**, *Cooke*, 47.  
**Natural Selection**, *Spencer*, 32.  
**Nautical Terms**, *Delbos*, 41.  
**Nennius**, The Irish, *Hogan*, 41.

**New Guinea**, *Cunningham Mems.*, X., 48.  
**New Testament**, *see* Testament, 26.  
**New Testament Times**, *Hausraih*, 8, 19.  
**Nitidularia**, *Murray*, 52.  
**Norwegian Dictionary**, *Rosing*, 43.  
**Ophthalmic Tests**, *Pray*, 52; *Snellen*, 54.  
**Origins**, Christian, *Johnson*, 20.  
     of Religion, *Hibbert Lectures*, 14, 15.  
**Pali**, *Dipavamsa*, 34; *Milanda Panho*, 36;  
     *Vinaya Pitakam*, 38.  
     Handbook, *Frankfurter*, 35.  
     Miscellany, 37.  
**Pathology**, Inflammation Idea in, *Ransom*, 52.  
**Paul**, St., *Baur*, 8; *Pfleiderer*, 9; *Weinel*, 4.  
**Persian Grammar**, *Platts*, 37.  
**Persian**, *Avesti Pahlavi*, 34.  
**Peru**, Religions of, *Réville*, 15.  
**Philo Judæus**, *Drummond*, 29.  
**Philosophy**, 29.  
     and Experience, *Hodgson*, 29.  
     Jewish Alexandrian, *Drummond*, 29.  
     of Religion, *Pfleiderer*, 9.  
     Reorganisation of, *Hodgson*, 29.  
     Religion of, *Perrin*, 23.  
     Synthetic, *Collins*, 29; *Spencer*, 31.  
**Phyllotaxis**, *Church*, 47.  
**Plague**, *Boghurst*, 46.  
**Political Institutions**, *Spencer*, Princ. of Sociology, II., 31.  
**Prayers**, *Common Prayer*, 16; *Jones*, 20; *Personal*, 22; *Sadler*, 24; *Ten Services*, 26; *Vizard*, 27.  
**Prehistoric Man**, *Avebury*, 56; *Engelhardt*, 57; *Laing*, 59.  
**Printing**, at Brescia, *Peddie*, 59.  
**Professional Institutions**, *Spencer*, Princ. of Sociology, III., 31.  
**Profit-sharing**, *Schloss*, 59.  
**Prophets of O.T.**, *Ewald*, 8.  
**Protestant Faith**, *Herrmann*, 12; *Réville*, 11.  
**Psalms**, *Hebrew Texts*, 19, 35.  
     and Canticles, *Ten Services*, 26.  
     Commentary, *Ewald*, 8.  
**Psychology**, *Mind*, 30; *Scripture*, 30; *Wundt*, 33.  
     of Belief, *Pikler*, 30.  
     Principles of, *Spencer*, 31.  
**Reconciliation**, *Henslow*, 19.  
**Reformation**, *Beard*, 14.  
**Religion**, Child and, 13.  
     History of, *Kuennen*, 9, 14; *Réville*, 9, 15.  
     of Philosophy, *Perrin*, 23.  
     Philosophy of, *Pfleiderer*, 9.  
     Struggle for Light, *W'm*  
     *See also Christianity*, History of  
**Religions**, National and Universal, *Kuennen*, 21.  
     of Authority, *Sabatier*, 4.  
**Resurrection**, *Macan*, 22; *Marchant*, 22

**Reviews and Periodical Publications**, 61.  
**Rigveda**, *Wallis*, 38.  
**Rome**, *Renan*, 15.  
**Runes**, *Stephens*, 60.  
**Ruth**, *Wright*, C. H. H., 28.  
**Sanitation**, in Cape Coast Town, *Taylor*, 55.  
     in Para, *Notes*, 52.  
**Sanscrit**, *Abhidhanaratnamala*, 34; *Sørensen*, 37.  
**Self-Aid**, in War, *Caverhill*, 47.  
**Sermons**, *Beard*, 16; *Broadbent*, 16.  
**Services**, *Common Prayer*, 16; *Jones*, 20; *Ten Services*, 26.  
**Silva Gadelica**, *O'Grady*, 43.  
**Social Dynamics**, *Mackenzie*, 30.  
     Statics, *Spencer*, 32.  
**Sociology**, Descriptive, *Spencer*, 32.  
     Principles of, *Spencer*, 31.  
     Study of, *Spencer*, 32.  
**Solomon**, Song of, *Réville*, 23.  
**South Place Ethical Society**, *Conway*, 17.  
**Spanish Dictionary**, *Velasquez*, 44.  
**Spinal Cord**, *Bruce*, 47.  
**Sternum**, *Paterson*, 52.  
**Storms**, *Piddington*, 52.  
**Sun Heat**, *Cunningham Mems.*, III., 48.  
**Surgery**, System of, *von Bergmann*, 46.  
**Syriac**, *Bernstein*, 34; *Dietrich*, 34; *Nöldeke*, 36.  
**Taal**, *Afrikander*, *Oordt*, 42; *Werner*, 45.  
**Talmud**, Christianity in, *Herford*, 19.  
**Tennyson**, *Weld*, 60.  
**Testament**, New, Commentary, *Protestant Commentary*, 9.  
     Textual Criticism, *Nestle*, 7.  
     Times, *Hausraih*, 8, 19.  
     *See also Gospels*.  
**Testament**, Old, Cuneiform Inscriptions, *Schraeder*, 9.  
     Literature of, *Kantusch*, 21.  
**Test Types**, *Pray*, 52; *Snellen*, 54.  
**Theism**, *Voysey*, 27.  
**Theological Translation Library**, 3.  
**Theology**, Analysis of, *Figg*, 18.  
     History of, *Pfleiderer*, 9.  
**Truth**, Search for, *Horton*, 20.  
**Trypanosomiasis**, *Dutton*, 48.  
**Virgil**, *Henry*, 57.  
**Virgin Birth**, *Lobstein*, 10.  
**Weissmann**, *Spencer*, 32.  
**Woman's Labour**, *Englishwoman's Review*, 57; *Harrison*, 57; *Fynne*, 60.  
**Suffrage**, *Blackburn*, 56.  
**Yellow Fever**, *Durham*, 48.  
**Zoology**, *Fasciculi Malayenses*, 49; *Journal of the Linnean Soc.*, 49; *Liverpool Marine Biology Committee Mems.*, 50.

# Williams & Norgate's Catalogue of Publications.

---

## I. Theology and Religion.

---

### THEOLOGICAL TRANSLATION LIBRARY.

#### New Series.

*A Series of Translations by which the best results of recent Theological Investigations on the Continent, conducted without reference to doctrinal considerations, and with the sole purpose of arriving at the truth, are placed within reach of English readers.*

Vols. I.-XII. were edited by the Rev. T. K. Cheyne, M.A., D.D., Oriel Professor of Interpretation in the University of Oxford, Canon of Rochester; and the late Rev. A. B. Bruce, D.D., Professor of Apologetics, Free Church College, Glasgow.

Vol. XIII. was edited by Rev. Allan Menzies, D.D., Professor of Divinity and Biblical Criticism in the University, St Andrews.

Vols. XV., XVII., XVIII., and XXI. are edited by Rev. W. D. Morrison, M.A., LL.D.

Vols. XIX. and XX. are edited by Rev. James Moffatt, B.D., D.D., St Andrews.

*The Price per Volume is 10s. 6d.*

**Subscribers** to the Series obtain three volumes for **21s.**, or **22s. 6d.** carriage free, payable before publication of the volumes.

Vols. XIX. and XX.

**THE EXPANSION OF CHRISTIANITY IN THE FIRST THREE CENTURIES.** By Adolf Harnack, Ordinary Professor of Church History in the University, and Fellow of the Royal Academy of the Sciences, Berlin; translated and edited by James Moffatt, B.D., D.D., St Andrews.

"On the value of such a work by such a writer it is scarcely necessary to enlarge. All familiar with Professor Harnack's method expect his treatment of a theme like this to be masterly, and their expectation is more than realised."—*Christian World*.

"Nothing could surpass the excellent skill and taste with which these volumes have been translated, edited, and produced."—*British Weekly*.

**THEOLOGICAL TRANSLATION LIBRARY—Continued.**

Vol. XXI. In the Press. Almost Ready. One Volume.

**ST PAUL: THE MAN AND HIS WORK.** By Prof. H. Weinel of the University of Jena. Translated by Rev. G. A. Bienemann, M.A. Edited by Rev. W. D. Morrison, LL.D.

Vol. XVIII.

**CHRISTIAN LIFE IN THE PRIMITIVE CHURCH.**

By Ernst von Dobschütz, Professor of New Testament in the University of Strassburg. Translated by Rev. G. Bremner, and edited by the Rev. W. D. Morrison, LL.D.

"It is only in the very best English work that we meet with the scientific thoroughness and all-round competency of which this volume is a good specimen; while such splendid historical veracity and outspokenness would hardly be possible in the present or would-be holder of an English theological chair."—*The Speaker*.

"Some may think that the author's finding is too favourable to the early churches, but at any rate there is no volume in which material for forming a judgment is so fully collected or so attractively presented."—*British Weekly*.

Vol. XVI.

**THE RELIGIONS OF AUTHORITY AND THE RELIGION OF THE SPIRIT.**

By the late Auguste Sabatier, Professor of the University of Paris, Dean of the Protestant Theological Faculty. With a Memoir of the Author by Jean Réville, Professor in the Protestant Theological Faculty of the University of Paris, and a Note by Madame Sabatier.

"Without any exaggeration, this is to be described as a great book, the finest legacy of the author to the Protestant Church of France and to the theological thought of the age. Written in the logical and lucid style which is characteristic of the best French theology, and excellently translated, it is a work which any thoughtful person, whether a professional student or not, might read without difficulty."—*Glasgow Herald*.

Vols. XV. and XVII.

**THE BEGINNINGS OF CHRISTIANITY.**

By Paul Wernle, Professor Extraordinary of Modern Church History at the University of Basel. Revised by the Author, and translated by the Rev. G. A. Bienemann, M.A., and edited, with an Introduction, by the Rev. W. D. Morrison, LL.D.

Vol. I. **The Rise of the Religion.**

Vol. II. **The Development of the Church.**

*From some of the Reviews of the Work.*

Dr Marcus Dods in the *British Weekly*—"We cannot recall any work by a foreign theologian which is likely to have a more powerful influence on the thought of this country than Wernle's *Beginnings of Christianity*. It is well written and well translated; it is earnest, clear, and persuasive, and above all it is well adapted to catch the large class of thinking men who are at present seeking some non-miraculous explanation of Christianity."

**THEOLOGICAL TRANSLATION LIBRARY—Continued.**

"This translation of Prof. Wernle's lectures deserves a very hearty welcome in England. The style is alive and vigorous, the thought suggestive; the whole narrative is admirably clear and simple, popular in the best sense of the term. . . . It may be accepted as a companion volume to Harnack's *What is Christianity?* as an announcement of a liberal position of slightly differing tendency. It is quite easy and pleasant reading for the ordinary layman who may be desirous of knowing the present position of the more advanced schools, and how much of the traditional theology these are prepared to retain. One could wish that a few more English theologians would attempt a similar apologia for the edification of the perplexed lay mind."—*Daily News*.

"No English book covers the same ground, or is conceived with the same breadth and sanity; in few works in any language are learning and insight so happily combined."—*Edinburgh Review*.

"The translation is well done, and the book is full of interest."—*Athenæum*.

---

The Earlier Works included in the Library are:—

**HISTORY OF DOGMA.** By Adolf Harnack, Ordinary Professor of Church History in the University, and Fellow of the Royal Academy of the Sciences, Berlin. Translated from the Third German Edition. Edited by the Rev. Prof. A. B. Bruce, D.D. 7 vols. (New Series, Vols. II., VII., VIII., IX., X., XI., XII.) 8vo, cloth, each 10s. 6d.; half-leather, suitable for presentation, 12s. 6d.

**ABBREVIATED LIST OF CONTENTS:—**Vol. I.: **INTRODUCTORY DIVISION:—**I. Prolegomena to the Study of the History of Dogma. II. The Presuppositions of the History of Dogma. **DIVISION I.—**The Genesis of Ecclesiastical Dogma, or the Genesis of the Catholic Apostolic Dogmatic Theology, and the first Scientific Ecclesiastical System of Doctrine. **BOOK I:—***The Preparation*. Vol. II.: **DIVISION I. BOOK II:—***The Laying of the Foundation.—I. Historical Survey.—I. Fixing and gradual Secularising of Christianity as a Church.—II. Fixing and gradual Hellenising of Christianity as a System of Doctrine*. Vol. III.: **DIVISION I. BOOK II:—***The Laying of the Foundation—continued*. **DIVISION II.—**The Development of Ecclesiastical Dogma. **BOOK I:—***The History of the Development of Dogma as the Doctrine of the God-man on the basis of Natural Theology. A.—Presuppositions of Doctrine of Redemption or Natural Theology. B.—The Doctrine of Redemption in the Person of the God-man in its historical development*. Vol. IV.: **DIVISION II. BOOK I.—***The History of the Development of Dogma as the Doctrine of the God-man on the basis of Natural Theology—continued*. Vol. V.: **DIVISION II. BOOK II.—***Expansion and Remodelling of Dogma into a Doctrine of*



**THEOLOGICAL TRANSLATION LIBRARY—Continued.**

*Sin, Grace, and Means of Grace on the basis of the Church.* Vol. VI.: DIVISION II. BOOK II.—*Expansion and Remodelling of Dogma into a Doctrine of Sin, Grace, and Means of Grace on the basis of the Church*—continued. Vol. VII.: DIVISION II. BOOK III.—*The Threefold Issue of the History of Dogma*.—Full Index.

"No work on Church history in recent times has had the influence of Prof. Harnack's *History of Dogma*."—*Times*.

"A book which is admitted to be one of the most important theological works of the time."—*Daily News*.

**WHAT IS CHRISTIANITY?** Sixteen Lectures delivered in the University of Berlin during the Winter Term, 1899-1900. By Adolf Harnack. Translated by Thomas Bailey Saunders. (New Series, Vol. XIV.) Demy 8vo, cloth, 10s. 6d.; half-leather, suitable for presentation, 12s. 6d.

Prof. W. Sanday of Oxford, in the examination of the work, says:—"I may assume that Harnack's book, which has attracted a good deal of attention in this country as in Germany, is by this time well known, and that its merits are recognised—its fresh and vivid descriptions, its breadth of view and skillful selection of points, its frankness, its genuine enthusiasm, its persistent effort to get at the living realities of religion."

"Seldom has a treatise of the sort been at once so suggestive and so stimulating. Seldom have the results of so much learning been brought to bear on the religious problems which address themselves to the modern mind."—*Pilot*.

"In many respects this is the most notable work of Prof. Harnack. . . . These lectures are most remarkable, both for the historical insight they display and for their elevation of tone and purpose."—*Literature*.

**THE COMMUNION OF THE CHRISTIAN WITH GOD: A Discussion in Agreement with the View of Luther.** By W. Herrmann, Dr. Theol., Professor of Dogmatic Theology in the University of Marburg. Translated from the Second thoroughly revised Edition, with Special Annotations by the Author, by J. Sandys Stanyon, M.A. (New Series, Vol. IV.) 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d.

"It will be seen from what has been said that this book is a very important one. . . . The translation is also exceedingly well done."—*Critical Review*.

"We trust the book will be widely read, and should advise those who read it to do so twice."—*Primitive Methodist Quarterly*.

"Instinct with genuine religious feeling; . . . exceedingly interesting and suggestive."—*Glasgow Herald*.

**A HISTORY OF THE HEBREWS.** By R. Kittel, Ordinary Professor of Theology in the University of Breslau. In 2 vols. (New Series, Vols. III. and VI.) 8vo, cloth. Each volume, 10s. 6d.

## CATALOGUE OF PUBLICATIONS.

### THEOLOGICAL TRANSLATION LIBRARY—Continued.

Vol. I. **Sources of Information and History of the Period up to the Death of Joshua.** Translated by John Taylor, D.Lit., M.A.

Vol. II. **Sources of Information and History of the Period down to the Babylonian Exile.** Translated by Hope W. Hogg, B.D., and E. B. Speirs, D.D.

"It is a sober and earnest reconstruction, for which every earnest student of the Old Testament should be grateful."—*Christian World*.

"It will be a happy day for pulpit and pew when a well-thumbed copy of the *History of the Hebrews* is to be found in every manse and parsonage."—*Literary World*.

"It is a work which cannot fail to attract the attention of thoughtful people in this country."—*Pall Mall Gazette*.

### AN INTRODUCTION TO THE TEXTUAL CRITICISM OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT.

By Professor Eberhard Nestle, of Maulbronn. Translated from the Second Edition, with Corrections and Additions by the Author, by William Edie, B.D., and edited, with a Preface, by Allan Menzies, D.D., Professor of Divinity and Biblical Criticism in the University of St Andrews. (New Series, Vol. XIII.) With eleven reproductions of Texts. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d.; half-leather, 12s. 6d.

"We have no living scholar more capable of accomplishing the fascinating task of preparing a complete introduction on the new and acknowledged principles than Prof. Nestle. This book will stand the most rigorous scrutiny; it will surpass the highest expectation."—*Expository Times*.

"Nothing could be better than Dr Nestle's account of the materials which New Testament textual criticism has to deal with."—*Spectator*.

"We know of no book of its size which can be recommended more cordially to the student, alike for general interest and for the clearness of its arrangement. . . . In smoothness of rendering, the translation is one of the best we have come across for a considerable time."—*Manchester Guardian*.

### THE APOSTOLIC AGE.

By Prof. Carl von Weizsacker. Translated by James Millar, B.D. 2 vols. (New Series, Vols. I. and V.) Demy 8vo, cloth. Each 10s. 6d.

"Weizsacker is an authority of the very first rank. The present work marks an epoch in New Testament criticism. The English reader is fortunate in having a masterpiece of this kind rendered accessible to him."—*Expository Times*.

" . . . No student of theology or of the early history of Christianity can afford to leave Weizsacker's great book unread."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"In every direction in this work we find the mark of the independent thinker and investigator . . . this remarkable volume . . . this able and learned work. . . ."—*Christian World*.

"The book itself . . . is of great interest, and the work of the translation has been done in a most satisfactory way."—*Critical Review*.

THEOLOGICAL TRANSLATION FUND LIBRARY.

Old Series.

*Uniform Price per Volume, 6s.*

**BAUR (F. C.). CHURCH HISTORY OF THE FIRST THREE CENTURIES.** Translated from the Third German Edition. Edited by Rev. Allan Menzies. 2 vols. 8vo, cloth. 12s.

— **PAUL, THE APOSTLE OF JESUS CHRIST, HIS LIFE AND WORK, HIS EPISTLES AND DOCTRINE.** A Contribution to a Critical History of Primitive Christianity. By Rev. Allan Menzies. 2nd Edition. 2 vols. 8vo, cloth. 12s.

**BLEEK (F.). LECTURES ON THE APOCALYPSE.** Translated. Edited by the Rev. Dr. S. Davidson. 8vo, cloth. 6s.

**EWALD'S (Dr. H.) COMMENTARY ON THE PROPHETS OF THE OLD TESTAMENT.** Translated by the Rev. J. F. Smith. [Vol. I. General Introduction, Yoel, Amos, Hosea, and Zakharya 9-11. Vol. II. Yesaya, Obadya, and Mikah. Vol. III. Nahûm, Ssephanya, Habaqqûq, Zakhârya, Yéremya. Vol. IV. Hezekiel, Yesaya xl.-lxvi. Vol. V. Haggai, Zakharya, Malaki, Jona, Baruc, Daniel, Appendix and Index.] 5 vols. 8vo, cloth. 30s.

— **COMMENTARY ON THE PSALMS.** Translated by the Rev. E. Johnson, M.A. 2 vols. 8vo, cloth. 12s.

— **COMMENTARY ON THE BOOK OF JOB, with Translation.** Translated from the German by the Rev. J. Frederick Smith. 8vo, cloth. 9s.

**HAUSRATH (Prof. A.). HISTORY OF THE NEW TESTAMENT TIMES.** The Time of Jesus. Translated by the Revs. C. T. Poynting and P. Quenzer. 2 vols. 8vo, cloth. 12s.

The second portion of this work, "The Times of the Apostles," was issued apart from the Library, but in uniform volumes; see p. 19.

**KEIM'S HISTORY OF JESUS OF NAZARA: Considered in its connection with the National Life of Israel, and related in detail.** Translated from the German by Arthur Ransom and the Rev. E. M. Geldart. [Vol. I. Second Edition. Introduction, Survey of Sources, Sacred and Political Groundwork, Religious Groundwork. Vol. II. The Sacred Youth, Self-recognition, Decision. Vol. III.

**THEOLOGICAL TRANSLATION FUND LIBRARY—Continued.**

The First, Preaching, the Works of Jesus, the Disciples, and Apostolic Mission. Vol. IV. Conflicts and Disillusions, Strengthened Self-confidence, Last Efforts in Galilee, Signs of the Approaching Fall, Recognition of the Messiah. Vol. V. The Messianic Progress to Jerusalem, the Entry into Jerusalem, the Decisive Struggle, the Farewell, the Last Supper. Vol. VI. The Messianic Death at Jerusalem. Arrest and Pseudo-Trial, the Death on the Cross, Burial and Resurrection, the Messiah's Place in History, Indices.] Complete in 6 vols. 8vo. 36s.

(Vol. I. only to be had when a complete set of the work is ordered.)

**KUENEN (Dr. A.). THE RELIGION OF ISRAEL TO THE FALL OF THE JEWISH STATE.** By Dr. A. Kuenen, Professor of Theology at the University, Leyden. Translated from the Dutch by A. H. May. 3 vols. 8vo, cloth. 18s.

**PFLEIDERER (O.). PAULINISM: A Contribution to the History of Primitive Christian Theology.** Translated by E. Peters. 2nd Edition. 2 vols. 8vo, cloth. 12s.

— **PHILOSOPHY OF RELIGION ON THE BASIS OF ITS HISTORY.** (Vols. I. II. History of the Philosophy of Religion from Spinoza to the Present Day; Vols. III. IV. Genetic-Speculative Philosophy of Religion.) Translated by Prof. Allan Menzies and the Rev. Alex. Stewart. 4 vols. 8vo, cloth. 24s.

**RÉVILLE (Dr. A.). PROLEGOMENA OF THE HISTORY OF RELIGIONS.** With an Introduction by Prof. F. Max Muller. 8vo, cloth. 6s.

**PROTESTANT COMMENTARY ON THE NEW TESTAMENT.** With General and Special Introductions. Edited by Profs. P. W. Schmidt and F. von Holzendorff. Translated from the Third German Edition by the Rev. F. H. Jones, B.A. 3 vols. 8vo, cloth. 18s.

**SCHRADER (Prof. E.). THE CUNEIFORM INSCRIPTIONS AND THE OLD TESTAMENT.** Translated from the Second Enlarged Edition, with Additions by the Author, and an Introduction by the Rev. Owen C. Whitehouse, M.A. 2 vols. (Vol. I. not sold separately.) With a Map. 8vo, cloth. 12s.

**ZELLER (Dr. E.). THE CONTENTS AND ORIGIN OF THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES CRITICALLY INVESTIGATED.** Preceded by Dr. Fr. Overbeck's Introduction to the Acts of the Apostles from De Wette's Handbook. Translated by Joseph Dare. 2 vols. 8vo, cloth. 12s.

## THE CROWN THEOLOGICAL LIBRARY.

Dr John Watson, of Liverpool: "The Crown Theological Library is rendering valuable service to lay theologians in this country, as well as to ministers."

*The volumes are uniform in size (crown octavo) and binding, but the price varies according to the size and importance of the work.*

**Vol. I. BABEL AND BIBLE.** By Dr. Friedrich Delitzsch, Professor of Assyriology in the University of Berlin. Authorised Translation. Edited, with an Introduction, by Rev. C. H. W. Johns. Crown 8vo, with 77 illustrations, cloth. 5s.

These are the two famous Lectures which were delivered before the Deutsche Orient-Gesellschaft in the presence of the German Emperor, and again before the Emperor, Empress, and the Court, and which gave rise to the Babel-Bible controversy. They set forth freshly and temperately the close relation between the results of cuneiform studies and the more familiar facts of the Old Testament, and clearly state the conclusions of European scholarship as to the compilation of the Pentateuch from many different sources, and as to its dependence on Babylonian myths for large portions of its primeval history.

"This interestingly illustrated and well-made version of the Lectures should satisfy both scholars and general readers, though no doubt scholars will know best how to appreciate the high value of its arguments."—*Scotsman*.

"It is written in an interesting and arresting style, and gives the best account we have seen in short compass of these most important discoveries."—*The Weekly Leader*.

"It is long since any book on Biblical Archæology could claim to be more deeply interesting to inquiring minds than this volume must be admitted to be by any thoughtful reader. . . . We believe that most readers will be delighted with the book as a description, romantic in its realism, of actual discoveries, and their bearing on the accuracy of the Old Testament statements."—*Christian Commonwealth*.

**Vol. II. THE VIRGIN BIRTH OF CHRIST: An Historical and Critical Essay.** By Paul Lobstein, Professor of Dogmatics in the University of Strassburg. Translated by Victor Leuliette, A.K.C., B.ès-L., Paris. Edited, with an Introduction, by W. D. Morrison, LL.D. Crown 8vo. 3s.

"It should be added that Lobstein falls behind no one of those who have refined the tone of modern controversy, that his attitude to those whose views he opposes is considerate, his own purpose constructive for faith, and his tone impressively reverent. Mr Leuliette's translation is in admirably clear and good English."—*Hibbert Journal*.

"Professor Lobstein handles his theme with a thoroughly reverent spirit, and the book may be recommended to all who are in doubt as to this particular dogma."—*Scotsman*.

"No one who reads this most scholarly and convincing volume will doubt the sincerity of the Professor's endeavour and aim; and most readers will gratefully own the notable success he has achieved."—*St Andrew*.

14 Henrietta Street, Covent Garden, London, W.C.

## THE CROWN THEOLOGICAL LIBRARY—Continued.

- Vol. III. **MY STRUGGLE FOR LIGHT: Confessions of a Preacher.** By R. Wimmer, Pastor of Weisweil-am-Rhein in Baden. Crown 8vo, cloth. 3s. 6d.

Dr. P. T. Forsyth, Principal of Hackney College.—"A beautiful translation of a beautiful book."

"It is a book which will appeal to ministers who are anxious to preserve intellectual sincerity, and to thoughtful laymen who are turning over in their mind the deepest problems of religion. The author's spirit throughout the book reminds one of Martineau. The tone and style of the book are admirable."—Dr. John Watson in *Christian Commonwealth*.

"Well worth translating and adding to the Crown Theological Library. It is a book of beautiful intention and most sincere aspiration."—*Expository Times*.

"This is a notable and vital book, full of keen thought and sweet with the fragrance of true piety."—*Week's Survey*.

"This is a delightful book, for we have in it, not the result of scholarship, though that is sound and wide, but the faithful record of the victorious struggles of a religious genius with the spectres of a mind which assail every earnest and thoughtful man in this critical age. The book has one of the marks of true greatness—absolute sincerity. The entire courage, simplicity, and clearmindedness with which Wimmer faces the difficulties of modern religious thought enforce our admiration, and win our trust and sympathy."—*Examiner*.

- Vol. IV. **LIBERAL CHRISTIANITY: Its Origin, Nature, and Mission.** By Jean Réville, Professeur adjoint à la Faculté de Théologie Protestante de l'Université de Paris. Translated and edited by Victor Leuliette, A.K.C., B.-ès-L. Crown 8vo, cloth. 4s.

"The book is a powerful, lucid and interesting restatement of the position of Protestantism in regard to modern advances in philosophy and science."—*Scotsman*.

"We commend the book for its lucid style, vigorous reasoning, and spiritual aims."—*Christian Commonwealth*.

"Admirably translated and edited by Victor Leuliette; is a book which will be of great value to all who are interested in the history of religious development."—*St Andrew*.

"An honest and earnest effort to vindicate the eternal place of religion in the life of man, and deserves all respect."—*Week's Survey*.

- Vol. V. **WHAT IS CHRISTIANITY?** By Adolf Harnack, Professor of Church History in the University, Berlin. Translated by Thomas Bailey Saunders. Crown 8vo. 5s.

Prof. W. Sanday, of Oxford, in an examination of the work, says: "I may assume that Harnack's book, which has attracted a good deal of attention in this country as in Germany, is by this time well known, and that its merits are recognised—its fresh and vivid descriptions, its breadth of view and skilful selection of points, its frankness, its genuine enthusiasm, its persistent effort to get at the living realities of religion."

"In many respects this is the most notable work of Prof. Harnack. . . . These lectures are most remarkable, both for the historical insight they display and for their elevation of tone and purpose."—*Literature*.

**THE CROWN THEOLOGICAL LIBRARY—Continued.**

- Vol. VI. FAITH AND MORALS.** By W. Herrmann, Professor of Systematic Theology at the University of Marburg; Author of "The Communion of the Christian with God." Crown 8vo, cloth. 5s.

Two of the author's shorter writings, with brief notes by the translators. One is on Ritschl, and discusses the Protestant notion of Christian Belief; the other on Romanist *versus* Protestant Ethics, showing the fundamentally opposite conceptions of the moral law underlying recent Jesuit and Protestant views of truth-speaking or of conscience. An Appendix written for the last German edition deals with three replies.

- Vol. VII. EARLY HEBREW STORY.** A Study of the Origin, the Value, and the Historical Background of the Legends of Israel. By John P. Peters, D.D., Rector of St Michael's Church, New York; author of "Nippur, or Explorations and Adventures on the Euphrates." Crown 8vo, cloth. 5s.

These lectures were originally delivered as Bond Lectures before the Bangor Theological Seminary in Bangor, Me., U.S.A. Extract from a minute adopted by the faculty of that institution after the delivery of those lectures:—"The broad and ripe scholarship, the fresh knowledge of details, the constructive temper, and the reverent Christian spirit which were always manifest, gave these lectures exceptional worth, not only for the student body, but for the large company of thoughtful people who heard them."

"These lectures are certainly of quite exceptional worth. Dr. Peters has for many years given the attention of a ripe and thorough scholar to the beginnings of history in Israel; and these lectures will not only interest the general reader, but will suggest much to the expert."—*British Weekly*.

- Vol. VIII. BIBLE PROBLEMS AND THE NEW MATERIAL FOR THEIR SOLUTION.** A Plea for Thoroughness of Investigation addressed to Churchmen and Scholars. By the Rev. T. K. Cheyne, D.Litt., D.D., Fellow of the British Academy; Oriel Professor of Interpretation in the University of Oxford, and Canon of Rochester. Crown 8vo. 5s.

"The temper of his book is admirably gentle and restrained, and the matter is of most living interest."—*Academy and Literature*.

"The work is remarkably interesting and learned . . . those who wish to understand what problems are likely to engage attention in the near future ought not to neglect the book."—*British Friend*.

- Vol. IX. THE DOCTRINE OF THE ATONEMENT AND ITS HISTORICAL EVOLUTION; and RELIGION AND MODERN CULTURE.** By the late Auguste Sabatier, Professor in the University of Paris, and Dean of the Protestant Theological Faculty. Translated by Victor Leuliette, A.K.C., B.-ès-L. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

"The essay on The Atonement is a masterly outline sketch of the historical evolution of the doctrine."—*Oxford Chronicle*.

**THE CROWN THEOLOGICAL LIBRARY—Continued.**

"The second portion of the volume is an admirable statement of the mental condition of the modern world, its doubts and confusions, and of the true method of resolving them. . . . Both the studies in the volume are profoundly interesting; marked everywhere by the piercing insight, philosophic grasp, and deep spirituality which are characteristic of this great and lamented Christian thinker."—*The Christian World*

- Vol. X. THE EARLY CHRISTIAN CONCEPTION OF CHRIST: Its Value and Significance in the History of Religion.** By Otto Pfeiderer, D.D., Professor of Practical Theology in the University, Berlin. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

"We can heartily recommend Professor Pfeiderer's book as a solid contribution towards the solution of the question which it discusses."—*St Andrew*.

"It would be difficult to name any recent English work which could compare with this brilliant essay as a concise but lucid presentation of the attitude of the more advanced school of German theologians to the founder of the Christian religion."—*Scotsman*.

- Vol. XI. THE CHILD AND RELIGION: Eleven Essays.** By Prof. Henry Jones, M.A., LL.D., University of Glasgow; C. F. G. Masterman, M.A.; Prof. George T. Ladd, D.D., LL.D., University of Yale; Rev. F. R. Tennant, M.A., B.Sc., Hulsean Lecturer; Rev. J. Cynddylan Jones, D.D.; Rev. Canon Hensley Henson, M.A.; Rev. Robert F. Horton, M.A., D.D.; Rev. G. Hill, M.A., D.D.; Rev. J. J. Thornton; Rev. Rabbi A. A. Green; Prof. Joseph Agar Beet, D.D. Edited by Thomas Stephens, B.A. Crown 8vo. 5s.

"No fresher and more instructive book on this question has been issued for years, and the study of its pages will often prove a godsend to many perplexed minds in the church and in the Christian home."—*British Weekly*.

- Vol. XII. THE EVOLUTION OF RELIGION: an Anthropological Study.** By L. R. Farnell, D.Litt., Fellow and Tutor of Exeter College, Oxford; University Lecturer in Classical Archæology, etc., etc. Crown 8vo, cloth. 5s.

*In the Press.*

- THE HISTORY OF EARLY CHRISTIAN LITERATURE. The Books of the New Testament.** By H. Von Soden, D.D., Professor of Theology in the University of Berlin. Translated by the Rev. J. R. Wilkinson, and edited by Rev. W. D. Morrison, LL.D. Crown 8vo, cloth. 5s.

*In Active Preparation.*

- SCIENCE AND RELIGION: A Demonstration of the Reconcilability of their Points of View.** By Rudolf Otto, Professor of Theology in Gottingen.

- JESUS.** By Wilhelm Bousset, Professor of Theology in Gottingen.



---

### THE HIBBERT LECTURES.

Library Edition, demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. per volume. Cheap Popular Edition, 3s. 6d. per volume.

**ALVIELLA (Count GOBLET D'). EVOLUTION OF THE IDEA OF GOD, ACCORDING TO ANTHROPOLOGY AND HISTORY.** Translated by the Rev. P. H. Wicksteed. (Hibbert Lectures, 1891.) Cloth. 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3s. 6d.

**BEARD (Rev. Dr. C.). LECTURES ON THE REFORMATION OF THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY IN ITS RELATION TO MODERN THOUGHT AND KNOWLEDGE.** (Hibbert Lectures, 1883.) 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3rd Edition, 3s. 6d.

**DAVIDS (T. W. RHYS). LECTURES ON SOME POINTS IN THE HISTORY OF INDIAN BUDDHISM.** (Hibbert Lectures, 1881.) 2nd Edition. 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3s. 6d.

**DRUMMOND (Dr.). VIA, VERITAS, VITA.** Lectures on Christianity in its most Simple and Intelligible Form. (The Hibbert Lectures, 1894.) 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3s. 6d.

**HATCH (Rev. Dr.). LECTURES ON THE INFLUENCE OF GREEK IDEAS AND USAGES UPON THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH.** Edited by Dr. Fairbairn. (Hibbert Lectures, 1888.) 3rd Edition. 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3s. 6d.

**KUENEN (Dr. A.). LECTURES ON NATIONAL RELIGIONS AND UNIVERSAL RELIGION.** (The Hibbert Lectures, 1882.) 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3s. 6d.

**MONTEFIORE (C. G.). ORIGIN AND GROWTH OF RELIGION AS ILLUSTRATED BY THE RELIGION OF THE ANCIENT HEBREWS.** (The Hibbert Lectures, 1892.) 2nd Edition. 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3s. 6d.

**PFLEIDERER (Dr. O.). LECTURES ON THE INFLUENCE OF THE APOSTLE PAUL ON THE DEVELOPMENT OF CHRISTIANITY.** Translated by the Rev. J. Frederick Smith. (Hibbert Lectures, 1885.) 2nd Edition. 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3s. 6d.

**RENAN (E.). ON THE INFLUENCE OF THE INSTITUTIONS, THOUGHT, AND CULTURE OF ROME ON CHRISTIANITY, AND THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH.** Translated by the Rev. Charles Beard. (Hibbert Lectures, 1880.) 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3rd Edition, 3s. 6d.

---

## THE HIBBERT LECTURES—Continued.

**RENOUF (P. LE PAGE). ON THE RELIGION OF ANCIENT EGYPT.** (Hibbert Lectures, 1879.) 3rd Edition. 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3s. 6d.

**RHYS (Prof. J.). ON THE ORIGIN AND GROWTH OF RELIGION AS ILLUSTRATED BY CELTIC HEATHENDOM.** (Hibbert Lectures, 1886.) 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3s. 6d.

**RÉVILLE (Dr. A.). ON THE NATIVE RELIGIONS OF MEXICO AND PERU.** Translated by the Rev. P. H. Wicksteed. (Hibbert Lectures, 1884.) 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3s. 6d.

**SAYCE (Prof. A. H.). ON THE RELIGION OF ANCIENT ASSYRIA AND BABYLONIA.** 4th Edition. (Hibbert Lectures, 1887.) 8vo, cloth 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3s. 6d.

**UPTON (Rev. C. B.). ON THE BASES OF RELIGIOUS BELIEF.** (Hibbert Lectures, 1893.) Demy 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 3s. 6d.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST.

**ALLIN (Rev. THOS.). UNIVERSALISM ASSERTED AS THE HOPE OF THE GOSPEL ON THE AUTHORITY OF REASON, THE FATHERS, AND HOLY SCRIPTURE.** With a Preface by Edna Lyall, and a Letter from Canon Wilberforce. Crown 8vo. Sewed, 1s. 6d. net; cloth, 2s. 6d. net.

**ALVIELLA (Count GOBLET D'). THE CONTEMPORARY EVOLUTION OF RELIGIOUS THOUGHT IN ENGLAND, AMERICA, AND INDIA.** Translated from the French by the Rev. J. Moden. 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d.

— **EVOLUTION OF THE IDEA OF GOD.** See The Hibbert Lectures, p. 14.

**ANNOTATED CATECHISM.** A Manual of Natural Religion and Morality, with many practical details. 2nd Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth. 1s.

**BAUR (F. C.). CHURCH HISTORY OF THE FIRST THREE CENTURIES.** See Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 8.

— **PAUL, THE APOSTLE OF JESUS CHRIST.** See Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 8.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST—Continued.

**BEARD (Rev. Dr. C.). THE UNIVERSAL CHRIST, AND OTHER SERMONS.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

— **LECTURES ON THE REFORMATION OF THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY IN ITS RELATION TO MODERN THOUGHT AND KNOWLEDGE.** See *The Hibbert Lectures*, p. 14.

**BEEBY (Rev. C. E., B.D., Author of "Creed and Life"). DOCTRINE AND PRINCIPLES.** Popular Lectures on Primary Questions. Demy 8vo, cloth. 4s. 6d.

**BIBLE.** Translated by Samuel Sharpe, being a Revision of the Authorised English Version. 6th Edition of the Old, 10th Edition of the New Testament. 8vo, roan. 5s. See also *Testament*.

**BLEEK (F.). LECTURES ON THE APOCALYPSE.** See *Theological Translation Library, Old Series*, p. 8.

**BROADBENT (The late Rev. T. P., B.A.). THIRTEEN SERMONS, AN ESSAY, AND A FRAGMENT.** With a Prefatory Note by Rev. Prof. J. Estlin Carpenter, M.A. Crown 8vo, cloth. 4s. net.

**CAMPBELL (Rev. Canon COLIN). FIRST THREE GOSPELS IN GREEK.** See *Testament, New*, p. 26.

**CHANNING'S COMPLETE WORKS.** Including "The Perfect Life," with a Memoir. Centennial Edition. 4to Edition. Cloth. 7s. 6d.

**CHEYNE (Prof. T. K.). BIBLE PROBLEMS AND THE NEW MATERIAL FOR THEIR SOLUTION.** See *Crown Theological Library*, p. 12.

**CHILD AND RELIGION.** Edited by Thomas Stephens, B.A. See *Crown Theological Library*, p. 13.

**CHRISTIAN CREED (OUR).** 2nd and greatly Revised Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth. 3s. 6d.

**CLARK (ARCHD. JAS.). DE SUCCESSIONE APOSTOLICA NEC NON MISSIONE ET JURISDICTIONE HIERARCHIÆ ANGLICANÆ ET CATHOLICÆ.** 8vo. (*Georgetown, Guiana.*) Cloth. 21s.

— **SEVEN AGES OF THE CHURCH; or, Exposition of the Apocalypse.** Sewed. 1s.

**COMMON PRAYER FOR CHRISTIAN WORSHIP: in Ten Services for Morning and Evening.** 32mo, cloth. 1s. 6d. Also in 8vo, cloth. 3s.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST—Continued.

**CONWAY/MONCURE D.). CENTENARY HISTORY OF THE SOUTH PLACE ETHICAL SOCIETY.**

With numerous Portraits, a facsimile of the original MS. of the hymn, "Nearer, my God, to Thee," and Appendices. Crown 8vo, half-vellum, paper sides. 5s.

**DAVIDS (T. W. RHYS). LECTURES ON SOME POINTS IN THE HISTORY OF INDIAN BUDDHISM.** *See* The Hibbert Lectures, p. 14.**DELITZSCH (F.). BABEL AND BIBLE.** Two Lectures delivered before the Deutsche Orient-Gesellschaft in the presence of the German Emperor. *See* Crown Theological Library, p. 10. *See also* Harnack, A., "Letter to *Preuss. Jahrbücher*," p. 18.**DOBSCHÜTZ (E. VON). CHRISTIAN LIFE IN THE PRIMITIVE CHURCH.** *See* Theological Translation Library, New Series, p. 4.**DRIVER (S. R.).** *See* Mosheh ben Shesheth, p. 22.**DRUMMOND (JAMES, M.A., LL.D., Hon. Litt.D., Principal of Manchester College, Oxford). AN INQUIRY INTO THE CHARACTER AND AUTHORSHIP OF THE FOURTH GOSPEL.** Demy 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d.

"This is a valuable book, the work of a liberal theologian of distinction and great influence."—Rev. R. J. CAMIBELL, in *Christian Commonwealth*.

"The book is not only learned, but also reverent and spiritual in tone, and ought to find its way into the libraries of students of all shades of belief, as a very notable attempt to solve one of the most important of New Testament problems."—*Christian World*.

"Of the spirit in which Dr. Drummond approaches the study of this work of a master mind, of the completeness and arrangement of the material, and of the temper in which the argument is conducted, it is impossible to speak too highly."—*Scotsman*.

— **VIA, VERITAS, VITA.** *See* The Hibbert Lectures, p. 14.— **PHILO JUDÆUS.** *See* p. 29.**ECHOES OF HOLY THOUGHTS: Arranged as Private Meditations before a First Communion.** 2nd Edition, with a Preface by Rev. J. Hamilton Thom. Printed with red lines. Fcap. 8vo, cloth. 1s.**EWALD (H.). COMMENTARY ON THE PROPHETS OF THE OLD TESTAMENT.** *See* Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 8.— **COMMENTARY ON THE PSALMS.** *See* Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 8.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST—Continued.

**EWALD (H.). COMMENTARY ON THE BOOK OF JOB.** See Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 8.

**FIGG (E. G.). ANALYSIS OF THEOLOGY, NATURAL AND REVEALED.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 6s.

**FOUR GOSPELS (THE) AS HISTORICAL RECORDS.** 8vo, cloth. 15s.

**GILL (C.). THE EVOLUTION OF CHRISTIANITY.** By Charles Gill. 2nd Edition. With Dissertations in answer to Criticism. 8vo, cloth. 12s.

— **THE BOOK OF ENOCH THE PROPHET.** Translated from an Ethiopic MS. in the Bodleian Library, by the late Richard Laurence, LL.D., Archbishop of Cashel. The Text corrected from his latest Notes by Charles Gill. Re-issue. 8vo, cloth. 5s.

**GOULD (Rev. S. BARING). LOST AND HOSTILE GOSPELS.** An Account of the Toledoth Jeshu, two Hebrew Gospels circulating in the Middle Ages, and Extant Fragments of the Gospels of the first Three Centuries of Petrine and Pauline Origin. Crown 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

**HARNACK (ADOLF). MONASTICISM: Its Ideals and History; and THE CONFESSIONS OF ST. AUGUSTINE.** Two Lectures by Adolf Harnack. Translated into English by E. E. Kellett, M.A., and F. H. Marseille, Ph.D., M.A. Crown 8vo, cloth. 4s.

"The lectures impart to these old subjects a new and vivid interest which cannot but win this faithful version many admiring readers."—*Scotsman*.

"One might read all the ponderous volumes of Montalembert without obtaining so clear a view or so rare a judgment of this immense subject as are offered in these luminous pages. . . . The translation is excellent, and gives us Harnack in pure and vigorous English."—*Christian World*.

— **LETTER to the "Preussische Jahrbücher" on the German Emperor's Criticism of Prof. Delitzsch's Lectures on "Babel and Bible."** Translated into English by Thomas Bailey Saunders. 6d. net.

— **HISTORY OF DOGMA.** See Theological Translation Library, New Series, p. 5.

— **WHAT IS CHRISTIANITY?** See Theological Translation Library, New Series, p. 6. Also Crown Theological Library, p. 11. See Saunders (T. B.), "Professor Harnack and his Oxford Critics," p. 25.

— **EXPANSION OF CHRISTIANITY IN THE FIRST THREE CENTURIES.** See Theological Translation Library, p. 3.

ALPHABETICAL LIST—Continued.

**HATCH (Rev. Dr.). LECTURES ON THE INFLUENCE OF GREEK IDEAS AND USAGES UPON THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH.** See The Hibbert Lectures, p. 14.

**HAUSRATH (Prof. A.). HISTORY OF THE NEW TESTAMENT TIMES.** The Time of the Apostles. Translated by Leonard Huxley. With a Preface by Mrs Humphry Ward. 4 vols. 8vo, cloth. 42s. (Uniform with the Theological Translation Library, Old Series.)

— **NEW TESTAMENT TIMES.** The Times of Jesus. See Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 8.

**HEBREW TEXTS, in large type for Classes:**

**Genesis.** 2nd Edition. 16mo, cloth. 1s. 6d.

**Psalms.** 16mo, cloth. 1s.

**Isaiah.** 16mo, cloth. 1s.

**Job.** 16mo, cloth. 1s.

**HENSLOW (Rev. G.). THE ARGUMENT OF ADAPTATION; or, Natural Theology reconsidered.** 3vo, cloth. 1s.

— **SPIRITUAL TEACHINGS OF BIBLE PLANTS; or, The Garden of God.** 8vo, cloth. 1s.

— **THE AT-ONE-MENT; or, The Gospel of Reconciliation.** 8vo, cloth. 1s.

— **CHRIST NO PRODUCT OF EVOLUTION.** 8vo, cloth. 1s.

**HERFORD (R. TRAVERS, B.A.). CHRISTIANITY IN TALMUD AND MIDRASH.** Demy 8vo, cloth. 18s. net.

CONTENTS:—Introduction. Division I. Passages from the Rabbinical Literature: A. Passages relating to Jesus. B. Passages relating to Minim, Minuth. Division II. General Results. Appendix containing the Original Texts of the Passages translated. Indices.

"His book (if he is right in his identification of the Minim) is a history of Judaizing Christianity—the first independent and competent history written in English."—*Expository Times*.

"It must become at once the standard authority on its subject."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"It is no exaggeration to say that it will prove indispensable not only to scholars interested in Talmudic literature, but to all who study the subject of the evangelical tradition. It will introduce the reader into a new world—that of Jewish thought in the centuries after Christ."—*Cambridge Review*.

**HERRMANN (W.). THE COMMUNION OF THE CHRISTIAN WITH GOD.** See Theological Translation Library, New Series, p. 6.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST—Continued.

**HERRMANN (W.). FAITH AND MORALS.** See Crown Theological Library, p. 12.

**HIBBERT JOURNAL: A Quarterly Review of Religion, Theology, and Philosophy.** Edited by L. P. Jacks and G. Dawes Hicks. Vol. I. Royal 8vo. 856 pp. Vol. II. 864 pp. Vol. III. 869 pp. Cloth. Each 12s. 6d. net. Annual Subscription, 10s. post free.

**HOERNING (Dr. R.). THE KARAITE MSS., BRITISH MUSEUM.** The Karaite Exodus (i. to viii. 5) in Forty-two Autotype Facsimiles, with a Transcription in ordinary Arabic type. Together with Descriptions and Collation of that and five other MSS. of portions of the Hebrew Bible in Arabic characters in the same Collection. Royal 4to, cloth, gilt top. 20s.

**HORTON (J.). MY SEARCH FOR TRUTH, AND WHAT I FOUND.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 2s. 6d.

**HUNTER (Rev. J., D.D.). THE COMING CHURCH.** A Plea for a Church simply Christian. Cloth. 1s. 6d. net.

— **CIVIC APATHY.** A Sermon preached at Bechstein Hall, London, Sunday morning, June 25, 1905. 6d. net.

**JOHNSON (EDWIN, M.A.). THE RISE OF CHRISTENDOM.** Demy 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

— **ANTIQUA MATER: A Study of Christian Origins.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 2s. 6d.

— **THE RISE OF ENGLISH CULTURE.** Demy 8vo, cloth. 15s. net.

**JONES (Rev. R. CROMPTON). HYMNS OF DUTY AND FAITH.** Selected and Arranged. 247 pp. Fcap. 8vo, cloth. 2nd Edition. 3s. 6d.

— **CHANTS, PSALMS, AND CANTICLES.** Selected and Pointed for Chanting. 18mo, cloth. 1s. 6d.

**JONES (Rev. R. CROMPTON). ANTHEMS.** With Indexes and References to the Music. 18mo, cloth. 1s. 3d.

— **THE CHANTS AND ANTHEMS.** Together in 1 vol., cloth. 2s.

— **A BOOK OF PRAYER.** In Thirty Orders of Worship, with Additional Prayers and Thanksgivings. 18mo, cloth. 2s. 6d. With Chants, in 1 vol. 18mo, cloth. 3s.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST—Continued.

**KAUTZSCH (E.). AN OUTLINE OF THE HISTORY OF THE LITERATURE OF THE OLD TESTAMENT.** With Chronological Tables for the History of the Israelites, and other Aids to the Explanation of the Old Testament. Reprinted from the "Supplement to the Translation of the Old Testament." By E. Kautzsch, Professor of Theology at the University of Halle. Edited by the Author. Translated by John Taylor, D.Lit., M.A., etc. Demy 8vo, cloth. 6s. 6d.

"This English translation . . . is likely to prove very acceptable to all those students who desire to see for themselves the view taken by the 'higher critics' of the growth of the Old Testament."—*The Guardian*.

"Dr. Taylor has rendered a great service to the English readers by his excellent translation of this important work."—*British Weekly*.

"As to matter, it is the work of a scholar who is not afraid of results suggested by fair research, but who never grasps at novelties merely for the sake of originality. In style and language, the book reads more like an original than a translation; an original, too, which in its terseness of expression has escaped the prolix obscurity so commonly complained of in the writings of the author's country."—*Church Gazette*.

"A brief yet comprehensive statement of critical opinion respecting the order and origin of the Old Testament books."—*Methodist Times*.

**KEIM'S HISTORY OF JESUS OF NAZARA.** See Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 8.

**KENNEDY (Rev. JAS.). BIBLICAL HEBREW.** See p. 35.

**KIRK (R. S.). SIDE-LIGHTS ON GREAT PROBLEMS OF HUMAN INTEREST.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 1s.

**KITTEL (R.). HISTORY OF THE HEBREWS.** See Theological Translation Library, New Series, p. 6.

**KUENEN (Dr. A.). LECTURES ON NATIONAL AND UNIVERSAL RELIGIONS.** See The Hibbert Lectures, p. 14.

— **THE RELIGION OF ISRAEL TO THE FALL OF THE JEWISH STATE.** See Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 9.

**LOBSTEIN (P.). THE DOGMA OF THE VIRGIN BIRTH OF CHRIST.** See Crown Theological Library, p. 10.

**LODGE (Sir O.). LIFE AND MATTER: A Criticism of Professor Haeckel's Riddle of the Universe.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 2s. 6d. net.



## ALPHABETICAL LIST—Continued.

**MACAN (R. W.). THE RESURRECTION OF JESUS CHRIST.** An Essay in Three Chapters. 8vo, cloth. 5s.

**MACKAY (R. W.). SKETCH OF THE RISE AND PROGRESS OF CHRISTIANITY.** 8vo, cloth. 6s.

**MARCHANT (JAMES). THEORIES OF THE RESURRECTION OF JESUS CHRIST.** Crown 8vo, stiff covers, 2s. net; superior cloth binding, 3s.

**MARTINEAU (Rev. Dr. JAMES). THE RELATION BETWEEN ETHICS AND RELIGION.** An Address. 8vo, sewed. 1s.

— **MODERN MATERIALISM: Its Attitude towards Theology.** A Critique and Defence. 8vo, sewed. 2s. 6d.

**MONTEFIORE (C. G.). ORIGIN AND GROWTH OF RELIGION AS ILLUSTRATED BY THE RELIGION OF THE ANCIENT HEBREWS.** See The Hibbert Lectures, p. 14.

**MOSHEH BEN SHESHETH'S COMMENTARY ON JEREMIAH AND EZEKIEL.** Edited from a Bodleian MS., with a Translation and Notes, by S. R. Driver. 8vo, sewed. 3s.

**NESTLE (E.). INTRODUCTION TO THE TEXTUAL CRITICISM OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT.** See Theological Translation Library, New Series, p. 7.

**OTTO (R.). SCIENCE AND RELIGION.** See Crown Theological Library, p. 13.

**PERRIN (R. S.). THE EVOLUTION OF KNOWLEDGE: A Review of Philosophy.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 6s.

**PERSONAL AND FAMILY PRAYERS.** 8vo, buckram. 1s. net.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST—Continued.

**PETERS (JOHN P.). EARLY HEBREW STORY.**

A Study of the Origin, the Value, and the Historical Background of the Legends of Israel. *See* Crown Theological Library, p. 12.

**PFLEIDERER (Dr. O.). LECTURES ON THE INFLUENCE OF THE APOSTLE PAUL ON THE DEVELOPMENT OF CHRISTIANITY.** *See* The Hibbert Lectures, p. 14.— **PAULINISM: A Contribution to the History of Primitive Christianity.** *See* Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 9.— **PHILOSOPHY OF RELIGION ON THE BASIS OF ITS HISTORY.** *See* Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 9.— **THE EARLY CHRISTIAN CONCEPTION OF CHRIST: Its Significance and Value in the History of Religion.** *See* Crown Theological Library, p. 13.**PLAIN COMMENTARY ON THE FIRST GOSPEL.**

By an Agnostic. 8vo, cloth. 14s.

**POOLE (REG. LANE). ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE HISTORY OF MEDIÆVAL THOUGHT IN THE DEPARTMENTS OF THEOLOGY AND ECCLESIASTICAL POLITICS.** 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d.**PROTESTANT COMMENTARY ON THE NEW TESTAMENT.** *See* Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 9.**RENAN (E.). ON THE INFLUENCE OF THE INSTITUTIONS, THOUGHT, AND CULTURE OF ROME ON CHRISTIANITY AND THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH.** *See* Hibbert Lectures, p. 14.**RENOUF (P. LE PAGE). ON THE RELIGION OF ANCIENT EGYPT.** *See* Hibbert Lectures, p. 15.**RÉVILLE (A.). THE SONG OF SONGS, commonly called the Song of Solomon, or the Canticle.** Translated from the French. Crown 8vo, cloth. 1s. 6d.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST—Continued.

**RÉVILLE (A.). ON NATIVE RELIGIONS OF MEXICO AND PERU.** *See* Hibbert Lectures, p. 15.

— **PROLEGOMENA OF THE HISTORY OF RELIGIONS.** *See* Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 9.

**RÉVILLE (JEAN). LIBERAL CHRISTIANITY.** *See* Crown Theological Library, p. 11.

— *See* also Sabatier's "Religions of Authority and Religion of the Spirit," p. 4.

**RHYS (J.). ON THE ORIGIN AND GROWTH OF RELIGION AS ILLUSTRATED BY CELTIC HEATHENDOM.** *See* Hibbert Lectures, p. 15.

**RIX (HERBERT). A DAWNING FAITH; or, The World as a Spiritual Organism.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 5s.

**ROBINSON (ALEX., M.A., B.D.). A STUDY OF THE SAVIOUR IN THE NEWER LIGHT.** 2nd Edition. Revised and partly re-written. Demy 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

— **OLD AND NEW CERTAINTY OF THE GOSPEL.** A Sketch. Crown 8vo, cloth. 2s. 6d.

**SABATIER (AUGUSTE). THE RELIGIONS OF AUTHORITY AND THE RELIGION OF THE SPIRIT.** With a Memoir by Professor J. Réville. *See* Theological Translation Library, New Series, p. 4.

— **THE DOCTRINE OF THE ATONEMENT AND ITS HISTORICAL EVOLUTION; and RELIGION AND MODERN CULTURE.** *See* Crown Theological Library, p. 12.

**SADLER (Rev. Dr.). PRAYERS FOR CHRISTIAN WORSHIP.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 3s. 6d.

— **CLOSET PRAYERS, Original and Compiled.** 18mo, cloth. 1s. 6d.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST—Continued.

**SAUNDERS (T. BAILEY). PROFESSOR HARNACK AND HIS OXFORD CRITICS.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 1s. 6d. net.

"It gives thoughtful and acutely reasoned support to the great historical student of Christianity who represents Berlin in theology against the pig-tailed opposition which Oxford has offered to his learning. A spirited piece of controversial writing, it cannot but prove stimulating to readers interested in modern divinity, no matter to which side of the debate their private prepossessions incline them."—*Scotsman*.

"Mr. Saunders writes with sobriety and with a knowledge of the points at issue. Readers of 'Harnack and his Critics' will do well to read his comments."—*Sheffield Daily Telegraph*.

**SAVAGE (M. J.). BELIEFS ABOUT THE BIBLE.** 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

**SAYCE (A. H.). ON THE RELIGION OF ANCIENT ASSYRIA AND BABYLONIA.** See Hibbert Lectures, p. 15.

**SCHRADER (E.). CUNEIFORM INSCRIPTIONS AND THE OLD TESTAMENT.** See Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 9.

**SEVERUS (Patriarch of Antioch). THE SIXTH BOOK OF THE SELECT LETTERS OF SEVERUS, PATRIARCH OF ANTIOCH, in the Syriac Version of Athanasius of Nisibis.** Edited and translated by E. W. Brooks. Vol. I. (Text), Part 1, and Vol. II. (Translation), Part 1. 2 vols. 8vo, cloth. 42s. net. Vol. I. (Text), Part 2, and Vol. II. (Translation), Part 2. 2 vols. 8vo, cloth. 42s. net. See Text and Translation Society, p. 38.

**SHARPE (SAMUEL). HISTORY OF THE HEBREW NATION AND ITS LITERATURE.** With an Appendix on the Hebrew Chronology. 5th Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth. 4s. 6d.

— **CRITICAL NOTES ON THE AUTHORISED ENGLISH VERSION OF THE NEW TESTAMENT.** 2nd Edition. 12mo, cloth. 1s. 6d.

**SMITH (MARTIN R.). WHAT I HAVE TAUGHT MY CHILDREN.** 2nd Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, cloth. 3s. 6d.

**SODEN (H. von, D.D.). THE HISTORY OF EARLY CHRISTIAN LITERATURE.** See Crown Theological Library, p. 13.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST—Continued.

**THE STATUTES OF THE APOSTLES.** The hitherto unedited Ethiopic and Arabic Texts. Edited, with an Introduction and Translations of the Ethiopic, Arabic, and Coptic Texts, by Rev. G. Horner, M.A. With an Appendix—a recently discovered variant of the Coptic Text. 18s. net.

**TAYLER (Rev. JOHN JAMES). AN ATTEMPT TO ASCERTAIN THE CHARACTER OF THE FOURTH GOSPEL,** especially in its Relation to the First Three. 2nd Edition. 8vo, cloth. 5s.

**TAYLOR (Rev. C.). THE DIRGE OF COHELETH IN ECCLES. XII. DISCUSSED AND LITERALLY INTERPRETED.** 8vo, cloth. 3s.

**TAYLOR (Rev. Dr J.). THE MASSORETIC TEXT AND THE ANCIENT VERSIONS OF THE BOOK OF MICAH.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 5s.

— See also Kautzsch, "Outline," p. 21.

**TEN SERVICES OF PUBLIC PRAYER, with Special Collects.** 8vo, cloth, 3s.; or 32mo, cloth, 1s. 6d.

— **PSALMS AND CANTICLES.** 8vo, cloth. 1s. 6d.

— **PSALMS AND CANTICLES, with Anthems.** 8vo, cloth. 2s.

**TEN SERVICES OF PUBLIC PRAYER,** taken in Substance from the Common Prayer for Christian Worship, with a few Additional Prayers for Particular Days. 8vo, cloth, 2s. 6d.; or 32mo, cloth, 1s.

**TESTAMENT, THE NEW. TISCHENDORF (C.). NOVUM TESTAMENTUM GRÆCE.** 3 vols. 8vo. 70s. net.

— **CAMPBELL (Rev. Canon COLIN, M.A., D.D.). THE FIRST THREE GOSPELS IN GREEK.** Arranged in parallel columns. 2nd Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, cloth. 5s. net.

**UPTON (C. B.). ON THE BASES OF RELIGIOUS BELIEF.** See Hibbert Lectures, p. 15.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST—Continued.

**VICKERS (J.). THE REAL JESUS: A Review of His Life, Character, and Death, from a Jewish Standpoint.** Crown 8vo. 6s.

— **THE CRUCIFIXION MYSTERY.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 3s. 6d.

**VIZARD (P. E.). PRAYERS, NEW AND OLD.** New Edition. Printed at the Chiswick Press. Crown 8vo, buckram. 1s. net.

**VOYSEY (Rev. C.). THE SLING AND THE STONE.** Vol. VIII. On the Lord's Prayer. 8vo, cloth. 3s. 6d. Vol. IX. The Fatherhood of God. Sermon on the Mount, etc. 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d. Vol. X. Revelation tested on Moral Grounds, etc. 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d.

— **THEISM AS A SCIENCE OF NATURAL THEOLOGY AND NATURAL RELIGION.** 8vo, cloth. 2s. 6d.

— **THEISTIC PRAYER BOOK.** 3rd Edition. 12mo, cloth. 3s. 6d.

**WEIR (T. H., B.D.). A SHORT HISTORY OF THE HEBREW TEXT OF THE OLD TESTAMENT.** By Thomas H. Weir, Assistant to the Professor of Oriental Languages in the University of Glasgow. Crown 8vo, sewed, 5s.; cloth, 6s.

**WEIZSÄCKER (C. VON). THE APOSTOLIC AGE.** 2 vols. See Theological Translation Library, New Series, p. 7.

**WERNLE (PAUL). THE BEGINNINGS OF CHRISTIANITY.** 2 vols. 8vo. See Theological Translation Library, New Series, p. 4.

**WICKSTEED (Rev. P. H.). THE ECCLESIASTICAL INSTITUTIONS OF HOLLAND, treated with Special Reference to the Position and Prospects of the Modern School of Theology.** A Report presented to the Hibbert Trustees, and published by their direction. 8vo, sewed. 1s.

**WIMMER (R.). MY STRUGGLE FOR LIGHT: Confessions of a Preacher.** See Crown Theological Library, p. 11.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST—Continued.

**WRIGHT (Rev. C. H. H.). BOOK OF GENESIS IN HEBREW TEXT.** With a critically revised Text, various Readings, and Grammatical and Critical Notes. Demy 8vo. 3s. 6d.

— **BOOK OF RUTH IN HEBREW TEXT.** With a critically revised Text, various Readings, including a new Collation of Twenty-eight Hebrew MSS., and a Grammatical and Critical Commentary; to which is appended the Chaldee Targum. Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d.

— **DANIEL AND HIS PROPHECIES.** Demy 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

— **DANIEL, THE BOOK OF: A Critical and Grammatical Commentary, with Appendix.** Demy 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

**WRIGHT (G. H. BATESON). THE BOOK OF JOB.** A new critically revised Translation, with Essays on Scansion, Date, etc. 8vo, cloth. 6s.

— **WAS ISRAEL EVER IN EGYPT? or, A Lost Tradition.** By G. H. Bateson Wright, D.D., Queen's College, Oxford; Headmaster Queen's College, Hong-Kong; Author of "A Critical Revised Translation of the Book of Job." 8vo, art linen. 7s. 6d.

**ZELLER (E.). CONTENTS AND ORIGIN OF THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES.** See Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 9.

## II. Philosophy, Psychology.

**BACON (ROGER), THE "OPUS MAJUS" OF.**  
 Edited, with Introduction and Analytical Table, by John Henry Bridges, Fellow of Royal College of Physicians, sometime Fellow of Oriel College. Complete in 3 vols., 31s. 6d.; Vol. III. sold separately, 7s. 6d.

**BREWSTER (H. B.). THE THEORIES OF AN-ARCHY AND OF LAW.** A Midnight Debate. Crown 8vo, parchment. 5s.

— **THE PRISON.** A Dialogue. Crown 8vo, parchment. 5s.

— **THE STATUETTE AND THE BACKGROUND.** Crown 8vo, parchment. 4s.

**COLLINS (F. H.). AN EPITOME OF THE SYN-THETIC PHILOSOPHY.** By F. Howard Collins. With a Preface by Herbert Spencer. 5th Edition. The Synthetic Philosophy Completed. 8vo, cloth. 21s.

**DENNYS (EDWARD N.). THE ALPHA; or, The First Mental Principle and Truth-Guide to General Well-Being and Progress: A Revelation but no Mystery.** 6th Edition. With a Portrait of the Author. Crown 8vo, cloth. 3s. 6d.

**DRUMMOND (Dr.). PHILO JUDÆUS; or, The Jewish Alexandrian Philosophy in its Development and Completion.** By James Drummond, LL.D., Principal of Manchester New College, Oxford. 2 vols. 8vo, cloth. 21s.

**HODGSON (S. H.). PHILOSOPHY AND EXPERIENCE.** An Address delivered before the Aristotelian Society. 8vo, sewed. 2s.

— **THE REORGANISATION OF PHILOSOPHY.** Address. 8vo, sewed. 1s.

**LAURIE (Professor SIMON). ETHICA; or, The Ethics of Reason.** By Scotus Novanticus. 2nd Edition. 8vo, cloth. 6s.

— **METAPHYSICA NOVA ET VETUSTA: A Return to Dualism.** 2nd Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth. 6s.

**LODGE (Sir O.). LIFE AND MATTER.** See Religion, p. 21.



**MACKENZIE (MALCOLM). SOCIAL AND POLITICAL DYNAMICS.** An Exposition of the Function of Money as the measure of Contract, Trade, and Government, viewed from the Principles of Natural Philosophy and Jurisprudence, in refutation of Economic Dogmas. Demy 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d.

**MIND: A Quarterly Review of Psychology and Philosophy.** Nos. 1-64. 1876-90. 8vo, each 3s. Vols. III.-XVI. in cloth, each 13s. New Series, Nos. 1-32, each 3s.; 33 and after, 4s. Vols. I.-VIII., each 13s. Vols. IX.-XIV., each 17s. Annual Subscription, post free, 12s.

**MÜNSTERBERG (HUGO, Professor of Psychology at Harvard University). THE AMERICANS.** Translated by Edwin B. Holt, Ph.D., Instructor at Harvard University. 12s. 6d. net.

**PERRIN (R. S.). EVOLUTION OF KNOWLEDGE (THE): A Review of Philosophy.** 6s.

**PIKLER (JUL.). THE PSYCHOLOGY OF THE BELIEF IN OBJECTIVE EXISTENCE.** Part I. 8vo, cloth. 4s. 6d.

**PROCEEDINGS OF THE ARISTOTELIAN SOCIETY FOR THE SYSTEMATIC STUDY OF PHILOSOPHY. Proceedings.** Vol. I., 4 Nos., 1890-91. 8vo. 12s. Discontinued after Vol. III. Part 2. Or each Part separately. Vol. I. No. 1, 2s. 6d.; No. 2, 2s. 6d.; No. 3, Part 1, 1s. 6d.; Part 2, 2s.; No. 4, Part 1, 1s. 6d.; Part 2, 2s. Vol. II. No. 1, Part 1, 1s. 6d.; Part 2, 2s.; No. 2, Part 1, 1s. 6d.; Part 2, 2s.; No. 3, Part 1, 2s.; Part 2, 2s. Vol. III. Part 1, 2s. 6d.; Part 2, 2s. NEW SERIES, Vols. I.-III. Demy 8vo, buckram, each 10s. 6d. net.

**ROBERTSON (G. C.). PHILOSOPHICAL REMAINS OF GEORGE CROOM ROBERTSON,** Grote Professor of Mind and Logic, University College, London. With a Memoir. Edited by Alexander Bain, LL.D., Emeritus Professor of Logic, Aberdeen, and T. Whittaker, B.A. (Oxon.). With Portrait. Med. 8vo, cloth. 9s. net.

**SCHURMAN (J. GOULD). KANTIAN ETHICS AND THE ETHICS OF EVOLUTION.** 8vo, cloth. 5s.

— **THE ETHICAL IMPORT OF DARWINISM.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 5s.

**SCRIPTURE (EDWARD W., Ph.D.). STUDIES FROM THE YALE PSYCHOLOGICAL LABORATORY.** Vols. I.-VI., each 4s. 2d. net.

**SMITH (H. W.). THE GARDEN OF LIFE.** Flowers of Thought on Culture, Conduct, and Character for every day in the year, gathered and arranged by H. W. Smith. Crown 8vo, cloth gilt. 5s. net.

**SPENCER (HERBERT). AN AUTOBIOGRAPHY.** 2 vols. Demy 8vo. With Portraits. Green buckram, gilt top. 28s. net.

"It is not too much to say that we close this book, the most interesting, and certainly one of the most important we have ever opened, feeling better, wiser, and humbler for having thus hastily read it."—*Academy*.

"It is a book for all men and for all time. In its pages the thinker may trace, step by step, the synthesis of synthetic philosophy. Here the poet will find not only a worthy inspiration, but a possibly surprising vein of sympathy. The statesman, the inventor, the litterateur, the man of theory, and the man of practice will find alike, within the covers of these two massive volumes, an almost inexhaustible treasury of interest and constructive thought. There is suggestion and instruction for all the world, and an almost indefinable fascination—whether it be due to the mere intrinsic beauty of the picture itself, or to the dignity of its execution, or to the sense of its almost laborious faithfulness, or to the combined attraction of all three."—*St James's Gazette*.

## **A SYSTEM OF SYNTHETIC PHILOSOPHY—**

**Vol. I. FIRST PRINCIPLES.** 11th Thousand, with an Appendix and a Portrait. Finally revised. New Edition, large crown 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

**Vols. II. and III. THE PRINCIPLES OF BIOLOGY.** 6th Thousand 8vo, cloth. Revised and greatly enlarged. Vols. I. and II. 18s. each.

**Vols. IV. and V. THE PRINCIPLES OF PSYCHOLOGY.** 5th Thousand. 2 vols. 8vo, cloth. 36s.

**Vol. VI. THE PRINCIPLES OF SOCIOLOGY.** Vol. I. Part 1, The Data of Sociology; Part 2, The Inductions of Sociology; Part 3, Domestic Institutions. 4th Thousand, revised and enlarged. 8vo, cloth. 21s.

**Vol. VII. THE PRINCIPLES OF SOCIOLOGY.** Vol. II. Part 4, Ceremonial Institutions; Part 5, Political Institutions. 3rd Thousand. 8vo, cloth. 18s.

**Vol. VIII. THE PRINCIPLES OF SOCIOLOGY.** Vol. III. Part 6, Ecclesiastical Institutions; Part 7, Professional Institutions; Part 8, Industrial Institutions. 2nd Thousand. 8vo, cloth. 16s.

**Vol. IX. THE PRINCIPLES OF ETHICS.** Vol. I. Part 1, The Data of Ethics; Part 2, The Inductions of Ethics; Part 3, The Ethics of Individual Life. 2nd Thousand. 8vo, cloth. 15s.

**Vol. X. THE PRINCIPLES OF ETHICS.** Vol. II. Part 4, Justice; Part 5, Negative Beneficence; Part 6, Positive Beneficence; Appendices. Demy 8vo, cloth. 12s. 6d.

*Also to be had separately :*

**SPENCER (HERBERT). JUSTICE.** Being Part 4 of the Principles of Ethics. 2nd Thousand. 8vo, cloth. 6s.

*Other Works.*

— **THE STUDY OF SOCIOLOGY.** Library Edition (21st thousand), with a Postscript. 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d.

— **EDUCATION: Intellectual, Moral, and Physical.** Cheap Edition. Entirely reset. 46th Thousand. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.

— **ESSAYS: Scientific, Political, and Speculative.** A new Edition, rearranged, with additional Essays. 3 vols. 8vo, cloth. (Each 10s.) 30s.

— **SOCIAL STATICS.** Abridged and revised, together with "The Man *v.* The State." 8vo, cloth. 10s.

— **VARIOUS FRAGMENTS.** Uniform in library binding. Demy 8vo, cloth. Enlarged Edition. 6s.

— **FACTS AND COMMENTS.** Demy 8vo, cloth. 6s.

— **THE MAN *versus* THE STATE.** 14th Thousand. Sewed. 1s.

— **A REJOINDER TO PROFESSOR WEISMANN.** Sewed. 6d.

— **REASONS FOR DISSENTING FROM THE PHILOSOPHY OF M. COMTE.** Sewed. 6d.

— **DESCRIPTIVE SOCIOLOGY; or, Groups of Sociological Facts.** Compiled and abstracted by Professor D. Duncan of Madras, Dr Richard Scheppig, and James Collier. Folio, boards.

- No. 1. English. 18s.
- No. 2. Ancient American Races. 16s.
- No. 3. Lowest Races, Negritto Races, Polynesians. 18s.
- No. 4. African Races. 16s.
- No. 5. Asiatic Races. 18s.
- No. 6. American Races. 18s.
- No. 7. Hebrews and Phœnicians. 21s.
- No. 8. The French Civilisation. 30s.

*New volumes in preparation.*

**SPENCER (HERBERT). COLLINS (F. H.). AN  
EPITOME OF THE SYNTHETIC PHILOSOPHY.**

By F. Howard Collins. Being a Digest of Mr Herbert Spencer's Works. 5th Edition, the Synthetic Philosophy Completed. With a Preface by Herbert Spencer. 8vo, cloth. 21s.

**DREY (S.). HERBERT SPENCER'S THEORY  
OF RELIGION AND MORALITY.** By Sylvan Drey.

8vo, sewed. 1s.

— — **A THEORY OF LIFE DEDUCED FROM  
THE EVOLUTION PHILOSOPHY.** Demy 8vo,  
sewed. 1s.

**SPINOZA: Four Essays.** By Professors Land Van Vloten, and Kuno Fischer, and by E. Renan. Edited by Professor Knight, of St Andrews. Crown 8vo, cloth. 5s.

**STUDIES FROM THE YALE PSYCHOLOGICAL  
LABORATORY.** Edited by Professor E. W. Scripture.

With many Illustrations. 8vo, sewed. 4s. 2d. each net. Vol. I. 1892-93, 100 pages. Vol. II. 1894, 124 pages. Vol. III. 1895, 110 pages. Vol. IV. 1896, 141 pages. Vol. V. 1897, 105 pages. Vol. VI. 1898, 105 pages.

**WUNDT (WILHELM). OUTLINES OF PSYCHO-  
LOGY.** Translated, with the co-operation of the Author, by Charles Hubbard Judd. Ph.D., Instructor in the Wesleyan University. 2nd Enlarged Edition. Demy 8vo, cloth. 8s. net.

### III. Oriental Languages, Literature, and History.

**ABHIDHANARATNAMALA (THE) OF HALA-YUDHA.** A Sanskrit Vocabulary (120 pp.). Edited, with a Sanskrit-English Glossary (180 pp.), by Dr. T. Aufrecht. 8vo, cloth. (Published at 18s.) 10s.

**AVESTI, PAHLAVI, and ANCIENT PERSIAN STUDIES** in Honour of the late SHAMS-UL-ULAMA DASTUR PESHOTANJI BEHRAMJI SANJANA, M.A., Ph.D. Paper cover, 12s. 6d. net.; cloth, 13s. 6d. net.

**BERNSTEIN and KIRSCH. SYRIAC CHRESTOMATHY AND LEXICON** (Chrestomathia Syriaca cum Lexico). 2 vols in 1. 8vo, cloth boards. 7s. 6d. I. Chrestomathia, separately. Sewed. 3s.

**DAVIDS (T. W. RHYS). LECTURES ON SOME POINTS IN THE HISTORY OF INDIAN BUDDHISM.** See The Hibbert Lectures, p. 14.

**DELITZSCH (Prof. F.). ASSYRIAN GRAMMAR.** With Paradigms, Exercises, Glossary, and Bibliography. Translated by the Rev. Prof. A. R. S. Kennedy. Crown 8vo, cloth. 15s.

— **THE HEBREW LANGUAGE VIEWED IN THE LIGHT OF ASSYRIAN RESEARCH.** Demy 8vo, cloth. 4s.

— **BABEL AND BIBLE.** See Crown Theological Library, p. 10.

**DIETRICH (GUSTAV). DIE MASSORAH DER OSTLICHEN UND WESTLICHEN SYRER IN IHREN ANGABEN ZUM PROPHETEN JESAJA** nach fünf Handschriften des British Museum in Verbindung mit zwei Tractaten über Accente. Sewed. 8s. 6d. net.

**DĪPAVAMSA (THE): A Buddhist Historical Record in the Pali Language.** Edited, with an English Translation, by Dr. H. Oldenberg. 8vo, cloth. 21s.

The "Dīpavamsa" is the most ancient historical work of the Ceylonese; it contains an account of the ecclesiastical history of the Buddhist Church, of the conversion of the Ceylonese to the Buddhist faith, and of the ancient history of Ceylon.

**ERMAN'S EGYPTIAN GRAMMAR.** Translated, under Professor Erman's supervision, by J. H. Breasted, Professor of Egyptology in the University of Chicago. Crown 8vo, cloth. 18s.

**EVANS (GEORGE). AN ESSAY ON ASSYRIOLOGY.** With 4to Tables of Assyrian Inscriptions. 8vo, cloth. 5s.

**FAIZULLAH-BHAI (Shaikh, B.D.). A MOSLEM PRESENT.** Part I, containing the famous poem of Al-Busaree. With an English Version and Notes. 8vo, cloth. 4s.

— **AN ESSAY ON THE PRE-ISLAMITIC ARABIC POETRY,** with special reference to the Seven Suspended Poems. 8vo, sewed. 4d.

**FLINDERS PETRIE PAPYRI.** See Curningham Memoirs, vols. 8, 9, and 11, p. 48.

**FRANKFURTER (Dr. O.). HANDBOOK OF PALI:** Being an Elementary Grammar, a Chrestomathy, and a Glossary. 8vo, cloth. 16s.

**FUERST (Dr. JUL.). HEBREW AND CHALDEE LEXICON TO THE OLD TESTAMENT.** 5th Edition, improved and enlarged. Translated by Rev. Dr. Samuel Davidson. Royal 8vo, cloth. 21s.

**HARDY (R. SPENCE). MANUAL OF BUDDHISM IN ITS MODERN DEVELOPMENT.** Translated from Singhalese MSS. 2nd Edition, with a complete Index and Glossary. 8vo, cloth. 21s.

**HEBREW TEXTS.** Large type. 16mo, cloth.

**Genesis.** (2nd Edition. Baer and Delitzsch's Text.) 1s. 6d.

**Psalms.** 1s.

**Job.** 1s.

**Isaiah.** 1s.

**KENNEDY (Rev. JAS.). INTRODUCTION TO BIBLICAL HEBREW,** presenting Graduated Instruction in the Language of the Old Testament. By James Kennedy, B.D., Acting Librarian in the New College, and one of the additional Examiners in Divinity at the University, Edinburgh. 8vo, cloth. 12s.

— **STUDIES IN HEBREW SYNONYMS.** Demy 8vo, cloth. 5s.

**LYALL (C. J., M.A., K.C.I.E.). ANCIENT ARABIAN POETRY, CHIEFLY PRÆ-ISLAMIC.** Translations, with an Introduction and Notes. Fcap. 4to, cloth. 10s. 6d.

**MACHBEROTH ITHIEL.** By Yehuda ben Shelomoh Alcharizi. Edited from the MS. in the Bodleian Library, by Thomas Chenery, M.A. 8vo, cloth. 3s.

**MILANDA PANHO, THE: Being Dialogues between King Milanda and the Buddhist Sage Nāgasena.** The Pali Text, edited by V. Trenckner. 440 pp. 8vo, sewed. 21s. *See also* "Pali Miscellany."

**MOSHEH BEN SHESHETH'S COMMENTARY ON JEREMIAH AND EZEKIEL.** *See* p. 22.

**MUSS-ARNOLT (W.). A CONCISE DICTIONARY OF THE ASSYRIAN LANGUAGE (Assyrian—English—German).** By W. Muss-Arnolt. To be completed in about 15 parts. Parts I. to XIX., each 5s. net.

**NEW HEBREW SCHOOL OF POETS OF THE SPANISH-ARABIAN EPOCH.** Selected Texts, with Introduction, Notes, and Dictionary. Edited by H. Brody, Ph.D., Rabbi in Nachod (Bohemia), and K. Albrecht, Ph.D., Professor in Oldenburg (Grand Duchy). English Translation of the Introduction, etc., by Mrs Karl Albrecht. Cloth. 7s. 6d. net.

**NÖLDEKE (THEODOR, Professor of Semitic Languages in the University of Strassburg). SYRIAC GRAMMAR.** Translated from the German by Rev. James A. Crichton, D.D. 18s. net.

— **DELECTUS VETERUM CARMINUM ARABICORUM GLOSSARIUM CONFECIT A. MULLER.** Crown 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

**NORRIS (E.). ASSYRIAN DICTIONARY.** Intended to further the Study of the Cuneiform Inscriptions of Assyria and Babylonia. Vols. I. to III. 4to, cloth. Each 28s.

**OLDENBERG (Prof. H.). BUDDHA: His Life, his Doctrine, his Order.** By Dr. Hermann Oldenberg, Professor at the University of Berlin. Translated by W. Hoey, M.A. 8vo, cloth gilt. 18s.

**PALI MISCELLANY.** By V. Trenckner. Part I. The Introductory Part of the Milinda Panho, with an English Translation and Notes. 8vo, sewed. 4s.

**PLATTS (J. T.). A GRAMMAR OF THE PERSIAN LANGUAGE.** By John T. Platts, Hon. M.A. (Oxon.), Teacher of Persian in the University of Oxford; late Inspector of Schools in the Central Provinces of India. Part I. Accidence. Broad crown 8vo. 10s. 6d.

**RENOUF (P. LE PAGE). LECTURES ON THE RELIGION OF ANCIENT EGYPT.** See Hibbert Lectures, p. 15.

**SADI. THE GULISTAN (ROSE GARDEN) OF SHAIK SADI OF SHIRAZ.** A new Edition of the Persian Text, with a Vocabulary, by F. Johnson. Square royal 8vo, cloth. 15s.

**SAYCE (Prof. A. H.). LECTURES ON THE RELIGIONS OF ANCIENT BABYLONIA AND SYRIA.** See the Hibbert Lectures, p. 15.

**SCHRADER (E.). THE CUNEIFORM INSCRIPTIONS AND THE OLD TESTAMENT.** See Theological Translation Library, Old Series, p. 9.

**SHIHAB AL DIN. FUTÜH AL-HABASHAH; or, The Conquest of Abyssinia.** By Shināb al Din Ahmad B. 'Abd al Kādir B. Sā'im B. 'Uthman. Edited, from an Arabic MS., by S. Arthur Strong. Part I. 8vo, sewed. 3s. net.

**SOCIN (Dr. A.). ARABIC GRAMMAR.** Paradigms, Literature, Exercises, and Glossary. 2nd Edition. Translated from the 3rd German Edition by the Rev. Prof. A. R. S. Kennedy, D.D. Crown 8vo, cloth. 8s. 6d.

— **KEY FOR TRANSLATING THE GERMAN EXERCISES IN ABOVE GRAMMAR.** Sewed. 1s. 6d.

**SÖRENSEN (S., Ph.D.), Compiled by. AN INDEX TO THE NAMES IN THE MAHABHARATA.** With short explanations. Royal 4to, in twelve parts, which are not sold separately, at 7s. 6d. per part net. Parts I. and II. now ready.

**STATUTES, THE, OF THE APOSTLES.** The hitherto unedited Ethiopic and Arabic Texts, with translations of Ethiopic, Arabic, and Coptic Texts, by G. Horner, M.A., See p. 26.

"We congratulate Mr Horner on his learned and serviceable work, and could wish that his example of persistent and self-denying labour might stimulate others to enter on this or kindred fields of research."—*Guardian*.



**TEXT AND TRANSLATION SOCIETY.** *Established for the purpose of editing and translating Oriental Texts chiefly preserved in the British Museum.*

*Volumes already issued—*

**THE SIXTH BOOK OF THE SELECT LETTERS OF SEVERUS, PATRIARCH OF ANTIOCH,** in the Syriac Version of Athanasius of Nisibis. Edited and translated by E. W. Brooks, M.A. Vol. I. Text, Parts I. and II. Vol. II. Translation, Parts I. and II. 84s. net.

**THE CANONS OF ATHANASIUS OF ALEXANDRIA,** in Arabic, Ethiopic, and Coptic. Edited and Translated by Prof. W. Riedel (Griefswald) and W. E. Crum.

**A RABBINIC COMMENTARY ON THE BOOK OF JOB,** contained in a unique MS. at Cambridge. Edited, with Translation and Commentary, by W. Aldis Wright, LL.D.

---

**TURPIE (Dr. D. McC.). MANUAL OF THE CHALDEE LANGUAGE.** Containing Grammar of the Biblical Chaldee and of the Targums, and a Chrestomathy, with a Vocabulary. Square 8vo, cloth. 7s.

**VINAYA PITAKAM:** One of the principal Buddhist Holy Scriptures. Edited in Pali by Dr H. Oldenberg. 5 vols. 8vo, cloth. Each 21s.

**WALLIS (H. W.). THE COSMOLOGY OF THE RIGVEDA:** An Essay. 8vo, cloth. 5s.

---

## IV. Modern Languages and Literature.

*A complete list of Messrs. Williams & Norgate's Educational Publications on Modern Languages may be had on application.*

**ABBOTSFORD SERIES OF THE SCOTTISH POETS.** Edited by George Eyre-Todd. I. Early Scottish Poetry; II. Mediæval Scottish Poetry; III. Scottish Poetry of the Sixteenth Century. Price of each vol., 3s. 6d.; large paper, 5s. net. IV. Scottish Ballad Poetry. 5s.; large paper, half-morocco, Roxburghe, 7s. 6d. net. V. Scottish Poetry of the Seventeenth Century. 5s.; large paper, half-morocco, Roxburghe, 7s. 6d. net. Vol. VI. Scottish Poetry of the Eighteenth Century. Vol. I. 3s. 6d.; large paper, half-morocco, Roxburghe, 5s. net. Vol. II. cloth, 5s.; large paper, half-morocco, 7s. 6d. net.

**ARMY SERIES OF FRENCH AND GERMAN NOVELS.** Edited, with short Notes, by J. T. W. Perowne, M.A.

This series is equally well adapted for general reading, and for those preparing for the Army, Oxford and Cambridge Certificates, and other Examinations—in fact, for all who wish to keep up or improve their French and German. The notes are as concise as possible, with an occasional etymology or illustration to assist the memory. The books selected being by recent or living authors, are adapted for the study of most modern French and German.

**LE COUP DE PISTOLET, etc.** Prosper Mérimée.  
2s. 6d.

"A book more admirably suited to its purpose could not be desired. The Editors deserve to be congratulated."—*National Observer*.

"The first two volumes are an excellent choice, and we advise any one, whether candidate or lay, to purchase the volume of Mérimée."—*Journal of Education*.

**VAILLANTE.** Jacques Vincent. 2s. 6d.

"The books are well got up, and in *Vaillante* an excellent choice has been made."—*Guardian*.

"The notes are few and brief, but all are helpful. The story itself is a delightful one."—*Scotsman*.

**AUF VERLORNEM POSTEN AND NAZZAR-ENA DANTI.** Johannes v. Dewall. 3s.

"The two stories by Johannes v. Dewall are well suited for their purpose; the style and diction are not too difficult for those whose acquaintance with German is not extensive, and ample explanatory annotation is provided."—*Saturday Review*.

"Well printed, well bound, and annotated just sufficiently to make the reading of them sure as well as easy."—*Educational Times*.

## ARMY SERIES—Continued.

**CONTES MILITAIRES.** A. Daudet. 2s. 6d.

"These stories are mainly culled from a series called *Contes du Lundi*, originally contributed by their author to the *Figaro*. Written at fever heat immediately after the great 1870 war, they show Daudet's power in many ways at its highest. . . . We therefore do more than recommend—we urge all readers of French to get the stories in some form, and the present one is both good and cheap. The paper is excellent, and the type clear and bold. . . . A neat map of Paris will assist the reader in following the movement of the stories."—*The Schoolmaster*

"The choice is an exceptionally good one, and the notes are excellent."—*Guardian*.

**ERZÄHLUNGEN.** E. Höfer. 3s.

"The series has brought fascinating examples of fiction under the eyes of English readers in a neat and handy form. Besides having the military flavour, they are models of style."—*Scotsman*.

**ATKINSON (ROBERT, M.A., LL.D.). THE PASSIONS AND HOMILIES FROM LEABHAR BREAC.** With an Introductory Lecture on Irish Lexicography. 958 pp. Todd Lecture Series, Vol. II. 8vo, sewed. Pages 1–34 out of print; pages 35–958, 6s.

**BAYLDON (Rev. G.). ICELANDIC GRAMMAR.** An Elementary Grammar of the Old Norse or Icelandic Language. 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

**BOÏELLE (JAS.). FRENCH COMPOSITION THROUGH LORD MACAULAY'S ENGLISH.** Edited, with Notes, Hints, and Introduction, by the late James Boïelle, B.A. (Univ. Gall.), Officier d'Académie, Senior French Master, Dulwich College, etc. etc. Crown 8vo, cloth. Vol. I. Frederick the Great. 3s. Vol. II. Warren Hastings. 3s. Vol. III. Lord Clive. 3s.

— See Victor Hugo, "Les Misérables" and "Notre Dame."

**BOOK OF BALLYMOTE (THE).** A Collection of Pieces in the Irish Language, dating from the end of the Fourteenth Century. Now published in Photo-Lithography from the Original Manuscript in the Library of the Royal Irish Academy. With Introduction, Analysis of Contents, and Index, by Robert Atkinson, M.A., LL.D., Professor of Sanskrit and Comparative Philology in the University of Dublin; Secretary of Council, Royal Irish Academy.

The Book of Ballymote contains numerous articles of interest to the scholar and to the antiquary. The original portion consists of—Genealogical Lists; Histories and Legends; a fragment of the Brehon Laws; a copy of the *Dindsenchas*; Treatise on Grammatical Topics, etc. The other portion contains translations from Latin originals: the Destruction of Troy, the Wandering of Ulysses, the Story of the *Æneid*, and the Life of Alexander the Great.

In imperial folio, reproduced by Photo-Lithography. Half-morocco, Roxburghe, cloth sides. £5, 5s. (200 copies only printed).

**BOOK OF LEINSTER (THE),** sometime called *The Book of Glendalough*. A Collection of Pieces in the Irish Language, compiled in part about the middle of the Twelfth Century. From the original MS. in Trinity College, Dublin. With Introduction, Analysis of Contents, and Index, by Robert Atkinson, M.A., LL.D., Professor of Sanskrit and Comparative Philology in the University of Dublin; Secretary of Council, Royal Irish Academy. In imperial folio, on toned paper, with a Photograph of a page of the Original. Half-roan, Roxburghe, cloth sides. £6, 6s. (200 copies only printed).

**DELBOS (L.). NAUTICAL TERMS IN ENGLISH AND FRENCH AND FRENCH AND ENGLISH.** With Notes and Tables. For the use of Naval Officers and Naval Cadets. By Leon Delbos, M.A., of H.M.S. *Britannia*, Dartmouth. 4th Edition, thoroughly revised and considerably enlarged, with additional Plates. Crown 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d. net.

**EUGENE'S STUDENT'S COMPARATIVE GRAMMAR OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE,** with an *Historical Sketch of the Formation of French*. For the use of Public Schools. With Exercises. By G. Eugène-Fasnacht, late French Master, Westminster School. 22nd Edition, thoroughly revised. Square crown 8vo, cloth, 5s.; or separately, Grammar, 3s.; Exercises, 2s. 6d.

**GOETHE (W. v.). ANNOTATED TEXTS.** See Educational Catalogue.

**HOGAN (E.). CATH RUIS NA RIG FOR BOINN.** With Preface, Translation, and Indices; also a Treatise on Irish Neuter Substantives, and a Supplement to the Index Vocabulorum of Zeuss's "*Grammatica Celtica*." Todd Lecture Series, Vol. IV. 8vo, sewed. 3s. 6d.

— **THE LATIN LIVES OF THE SAINTS AS AIDS TOWARDS THE TRANSLATION OF IRISH TEXTS AND THE PRODUCTION OF AN IRISH DICTIONARY.** By Edmund Hogan, S.J., F.R.U.I., M.R.I.A., Royal Irish Academy's Todd Professor of Celtic Languages. Todd Lecture Series, Vol. V. 2s. 6d.

— **THE IRISH NENNIUS FROM L. NA HUIDRE, AND HOMILIES AND LEGENDS FROM L. BREAC.** Alphabetical Index of Irish Neuter Substantives. Todd Lecture Series, Vol. VI. 2s. 6d.

**HUGO (VICTOR). LES MISÉRABLES: Les Principaux Episodes.** Edited, with Life and Notes, by the late J. Boielle. 2 vols. 6th Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth. Each 3s. 6d.

**HUGO (VICTOR). NOTRE DAME DE PARIS.**

Adapted for the use of Schools and Colleges. By the late J. Boileau. 2 vols. 2nd Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth. Each 3s.

**LEABHAR BREAC.** The "Speckled Book," otherwise styled, "The Great Book of Dun Doighre": a Collection of Pieces in Irish and Latin, transcribed towards the close of the Fourteenth Century. "The oldest and best Irish MS. relating to Church History now preserved" (*G. Petrie*). Now first published, from the original MS. in the Royal Irish Academy's Library. In imperial folio, on toned paper. In one vol., half-calf, £4, 4s. (200 copies only printed.)

**LEABHAR NA H-UIDHRI.** A Collection of Pieces in Prose and Verse, in the Irish Language, transcribed about A.D. 1100; the oldest volume now known entirely in the Irish language, and one of the chief surviving native literary monuments—not ecclesiastical—of ancient Ireland; now for the first time published, from the original in the Library of the Royal Irish Academy, with account of the Manuscript, description of its contents, index, and facsimiles in colours. In folio, on toned paper, half-calf. £3, 3s. (200 copies only printed.)

**LILJA (The Lily).** An Icelandic Religious Poem. By Eystein Asgrimson. Edited, with Translation, Notes, and Glossary, by E. Magnusson. Crown 8vo, cloth extra. 10s. 6d.

**LODGE (Sir O.). SCHOOL TEACHING AND SCHOOL REFORM.** A Course of Four Lectures on School Curricula and Methods, delivered to Secondary Teachers in Training at Birmingham during February 1905. 3s.

"The work of a sensible iconoclast, who does not pull down for the sake of mere destruction, but is anxious to set up something more worthy in place of the mediævalism he attacks."—*Outlook*.

"Let me commend this wise volume not only to teachers but to all concerned in national education. And especially to the politician. Half an hour with Sir Oliver Lodge would make him realise that there are problems on the inner side of the school door not dreamt of in his philosophy—would make him feel that the more he knows of these the better will he be able wisely to handle those others about which he is glibly talking every day."—Dr MACNAMARA in the *Daily Chronicle*.

**MAORI. NEW AND COMPLETE MANUAL OF MAORI CONVERSATIONS.** Containing Phrases and Dialogues on a variety of Topics, together with a few general rules of Grammar, and a comprehensive Vocabulary. 4s. net. See also Williams.

**NIBELUNGENLIED.** "The Fall of the Nibelungens," otherwise "The Book of Kriemhild." An English Translation by W. N. Lettsom. 4th Edition. 8vo, cloth. 5s.

**O'GRADY (STANDISH H.). SILVA GADELICA (I.-XXXI.).** A Collection of Tales in Irish, with Extracts illustrating Persons and Places. Edited from MSS. and translated. 2 vols. Royal 8vo, cloth. 42s. Or separately, Vol. I., Irish Text; and Vol. II., Translation and Notes. Each vol. 21s.

**OORDT (J. F. VAN, B.A.). CAPE DUTCH.** Phrases and Dialogues, with Translations, preceded by short Grammatical Notes. Crown 8vo, cloth. 2s. 6d. net.

**PHILLIPPS (V., B.A.). A SHORT SKETCH OF GERMAN LITERATURE, for Schools.** By Vivian Phillipps, B.A., Assistant Master at Fettes College, Edinburgh. 2nd Edition, revised. Pott 8vo, cloth. 1s.

**ROGET (F. F.). AN INTRODUCTION TO OLD FRENCH.** History, Grammar, Chrestomathy, and Glossary. 2nd Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth. 6s.

— **FIRST STEPS IN FRENCH HISTORY, LITERATURE, AND PHILOLOGY.** For Candidates for the Scotch Leaving Certificate Examinations, the various Universities Local Examinations, and the Army Examinations. 4th Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth. 5s.

— *See also* Voltaire.

**ROSG (S.). ENGLISH-DANISH DICTIONARY.** New Edition. Large 8vo, strongly bound, half-roan. 11s. 6d.

**SCHILLER (F. VON). THE BALLADS AND SHORTER POEMS.** Translated into English Verse by Gilbert Clark. Fcap. 8vo, cloth. 5s.

— **ANNOTATED TEXTS.** *See* Educational Catalogue.

**STOKES (WHITLEY). OLD IRISH GLOSSARIES.** Cormac's Glossary. O'Davaran's Glossary. A Glossary to the Calendar of Oingus the Culdee. Edited, with an Introduction and Index. 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d.

— **THE CREATION OF THE WORLD.** A Mystery in Ancient Cornish. Edited, with Translations and Notes. 8vo, cloth. 6s.

— **ON THE FELIRE OF CENGUS.** Vol. I. Part 1. Trans. R.I.A.'s Irish MSS. Series. 4to, sewed. 6s.

— **THE LIFE OF ST. MERIASEK.** A Cornish Drama. Edited, with Translation and Notes. Royal 8vo. One 8vo facsimile. Cloth. 5s.

**STOKES (WHITLEY). BRETON GLOSSES AT ORLEANS.** Edited by W. Stokes. 8vo, sewed. 1s.

— **OLD IRISH GLOSSES AT WUERZBURG AND CARLSRUHE.** Edited by W. Stokes. 8vo, sewed. 3s. 6d.

**SULLIVAN (W. K.). CELTIC STUDIES FROM THE GERMAN OF EBEL.** With an Introduction on the Roots, Stems, and Derivatives, and on Case-endings of Nouns in the Indo-European Languages. 8vo, cloth. 10s.

**TODD LECTURE SERIES** (Royal Irish Academy)—

Vol. I. Part 1. **MESCA ULAD ; or, The Intoxications of the Ultonians.** Irish Text, with Translation and Notes, by W. M. Hennesy. 8vo, sewed. 1s. 6d.

Vol. II. **LEABHAR BREAC, PASSIONS AND HOMILIES FROM.** Irish Text, Translation, and Glossary, with Lecture on Irish Lexicography, by Dr. R. Atkinson. 8vo, cloth. Part 1, pages 1-34, out of print. Part 2, pages 35-958, 6s.

Vol. III. **THE CODEX PALATINO-VATICANUS.** No. 830. Texts, Translations, and Indices, by B. MacCarthy, D.D. 8vo, sewed. 2s. 6d.

Vol. IV. **CATH RUIS NA RIG FOR BOINN.** With Preface, Translation, Indices, a Treatise on Irish Neuter Substantives, and a Supplement to the Index Vocabulorum of Zeuss's "Grammatica Celtica." By E. Hogan. 8vo, sewed. 3s. 6d.

Vol. V. **THE LATIN LIVES OF THE SAINTS AS AIDS TOWARDS THE TRANSLATION OF IRISH TEXTS AND THE PRODUCTION OF AN IRISH DICTIONARY.** By Edmund Hogan, S.J., F.R.U.I., M.R.I.A., Royal Irish Academy's Todd Professor of the Celtic Languages. 2s. 6d.

Vol. VI. **THE IRISH NENNIUS FROM L. NA HUIDRE, AND HOMILIES AND LEGENDS FROM L. BREAC.** Alphabetical Index of Irish Neuter Substantives. By Edmund Hogan, S.J., F.R.U.I., M.R.I.A., Royal Irish Academy's Todd Professor of the Celtic Languages. 2s. 6d.

**VELASQUEZ. LARGER SPANISH DICTIONARY.** Composed from the Dictionaries of the Spanish Academy, Terreros and Salva. Spanish-English and English-Spanish. 1279 pp., triple columns. 2 vols. in 1. Imp. 8vo, cloth. 24s.

**VIGA GLUMS SAGA.** Translated from the Icelandic, with Notes and an Introduction, by Sir Edmund Head, Bart. Fcap. 8vo, cloth. 5s.

**WEISSE (T. H.). SYSTEMATIC CONVERSATIONAL EXERCISES FOR TRANSLATING INTO GERMAN,** adapted to his Grammar. New Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth. (Key, 5s.) 3s. 6d.

**WEISSE (T. H.). A SHORT GUIDE TO GERMAN-IDIOMS:** being a Collection of the Idioms most in use. With Examination Papers. 3rd Edition. Cloth. 2s.

**WERNER'S ELEMENTARY LESSONS IN CAPE DUTCH (AFRIKANDER TAAL).** By A. Werner and G. Hunt. 16mo, cloth. 1s. 6d.

"We most cordially recommend this book to anyone going out to settle in South Africa. . . . The dialogues and exercises are admirably planned."  
—*Reformer*.

"To those outward bound such a book is sure to be useful."—*Practical Teacher*.

**WILLIAMS (The Right Rev. W. L., D.C.L.). A DICTIONARY OF THE NEW ZEALAND LANGUAGE.** 4th Edition. Edited by the Right Rev. Bishop W. L. Williams, with numerous additions and corrections. Demy 8vo, cloth. 12s. 6d.

— **LESSONS IN MAORI.** 3rd Edition. Fcap. 8vo, cloth. 3s.

**YELLOW BOOK OF LECAN.** A Collection of Pieces (Prose and Verse) in the Irish Language, in part compiled at the end of the Fourteenth Century; now for the first time published from the original Manuscript in the Library of Trinity College, Dublin, by the Royal Irish Academy. With Introduction, Analysis of Contents, and Index, by Robert Atkinson. 30 and 468 pp. (Royal Irish Academy's Irish facsimiles.) Large post folio, 1896, half-roan, Roxburghe, cloth sides. £4, 4s.

**ZOEGA (G. T.). ENGLISH-ICELANDIC DICTIONARY.** 8vo, cloth. 6s. net.

**ZOMPOLIDES (Dr. D.). A COURSE OF MODERN GREEK;** or, *The Greek Language of the Present Day.* I. The Elementary Method. Crown 8vo, cloth. 5s.



## V. Science.

MEDICINE—CHEMISTRY—BOTANY—ZOOLOGY—  
MATHEMATICS.

**ABRAHAM (P. S.). LEPROSY: A Review of some Facts and Figures.** 8vo. 1s.

**ANNETT (H. E., M.D., D.P.H.), J. EVERETT DUTTON, M.B., B.Ch., and J. H. ELLIOTT, M.D., Toronto. REPORT OF THE MALARIA EXPEDITION TO NIGERIA (1900).** Part I. Malarial Fever, etc. (Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Memoir III.). 10s. 6d. Part II. Filariasis (Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Memoir IV.). *Out of print separately, but is contained in the Thompson-Yates Laboratory Reports, Vol. IV, Part I. Price 20s.*

**BASTIAN (H. CHARLTON, M.A., M.D., F.R.S.). STUDIES IN HETEROGENESIS.** With 825 Illustrations from Photomicrographs. Royal 8vo, cloth. 31s. 6d.

**BENTHAM and HOOKER. GENERA PLANTARUM AD EXEMPLARIA IMPRIMIS IN HERBARIIS KEWENSIBUS SERVATA DEFINITA.** Auctoribus G. Bentham et J. D. Hooker. 3 vols., £8, 2s. Vol. I. (not separate). Vol. II., 56s. Vol. III. (Parts 1 and 2), 56s.; or separately, Part 1, 24s.; Part 2, 32s.

**BERGMANN (Prof. E. von, M.D.). A SYSTEM OF PRACTICAL SURGERY.** Edited by William T. Bull, M.D. In five Imperial 8vo volumes, containing 4174 pages, with 1976 illustrations in the text and 102 superb full-page plates in colours and monochrome. Extra cloth, £6, 6s.; half leather, marble sides and edges, £7, 7s.; half morocco, £8, 8s.

"We regard it as a valuable exposition of modern surgery. The main characteristics of the system are the fulness with which the subjects are treated and the wealth of illustrations. Many of these are in colours, and are very successful examples of colour-printing. The vast majority of the articles are very good, but we desire especially to praise those on Injuries of the Head and Diseases of the Breast."—*Lancet*.

**BERZELIUS (JÖNS JAKOB) and SCHÖENBEIN (CHRISTIAN FREDERICK). LETTERS. 1836–1847.** Edited by George W. A. Kahlbaum. Translated by Francis V. Darbishire and N. V. Sidgwick. Crown 8vo, cloth. 3s.

**BOGHURST (W.). LOIMOGRAPHIA.** An Account of the Great Plague of London in the year 1665. By William Boghurst, Apothecary. Now first printed from the B.M. Sloane MS. 349, and edited by Joseph Frank Payne, M.D. 8vo, cloth. 5s. net.

**BOYCE (RUPERT, M.B., F.R.S.). THE ANTI-MALARIA MEASURES AT ISMAILIA.** (Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Memoir XII.) Price 1s.

**BRUCE (ALEX., M.A., M.D., F.R.C.P.E., F.R.S.E.). A TOPOGRAPHICAL ATLAS OF THE SPINAL CORD.** Fcap. folio, half-leather. £2, 2s. net.

**BRUHNS. A NEW MANUAL OF LOGARITHMS TO SEVEN PLACES OF DECIMALS.** Royal 8vo. Stereotyped. Cloth. 5s. 6d.

**CATON (R., M.D., F.R.C.P., J.P.). HOW TO LIVE.** A Simple Manual of Hygiene for the Older Pupils in Primary Schools. 3d.

**CAVERHILL (T. F. S., M.B., F.R.C.P. Ed., Surgeon-Major, The Lothians and Berwickshire Yeomanry Cavalry). SELF-AID IN WAR.** With Practical Hints for Cavalry Wounded. With Illustrations and Diagrams. Small 8vo. 1s. net.

**CHAPMAN (E. J., Ph.D.). MINERAL SYSTEMS.** With Outline of an attempted Classification of Minerals in Natural Groups. Crown 8vo, cloth. 2s. 6d.

**CHURCH (A. H.). ON THE RELATION OF PHYLLOTAXIS TO MECHANICAL LAWS.** Part I. Construction by Orthogonal Trajectories, illustrated with 35 Figures. Large 8vo. 3s. 6d. Part II. Assymetry and Symmetry, with 60 Illustrations. Large 8vo. 5s. Part III. Secondary Growth Phenomena, with 34 Illustrations. 5s. Parts I., II., and III. bound, cloth, 15s.

**CLELAND, MACKAY, YOUNG (Professors). MEMOIRS AND MEMORANDA OF ANATOMY.** Vol. I. 16 Plates. 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

**COOKE (M. C.). MYCOGRAPHIA SEU ICONES FUNGORUM.** Figures of Fungi from all parts of the World. Vol. I. (in 6 Parts, each 12s. 6d.). 406 coloured Plates. Royal 8vo, cloth. 8os.

— **ILLUSTRATIONS OF BRITISH FUNGI (HYMENOMYCETES).** Plates. Royal 8vo. 8s. In 8 vols. 1198 coloured Plates. Royal 8vo, cloth gilt. £30, 5s. 6d.

— **BRITISH DESMIDS.** A Supplement to "British Fresh-water Algæ." 66 coloured Plates. 8vo, cloth. 52s. 6d.

**COOKE, (M. C.). HANDBOOK OF AUSTRALIAN FUNGI.** With 36 Plates. 8vo, cloth. £2.

— See also "Grevillea."

**CUNNINGHAM MEMOIRS—**

1. **CUBIC TRANSFORMATIONS.** By John Casey, LL.D. 4to, sewed. 2s. 6d.

2. **ON THE LUMBAR CURVE IN MAN AND THE APES.** By D. J. Cunningham, M.D. 13 Plates. 4to, sewed. 5s.

3. **NEW RESEARCHES ON SUN-HEAT, TERRESTRIAL RADIATION, Etc.** By Rev. Samuel Haughton, M.A., M.D. 9 Plates. 4to, sewed. 1s. 6d.

4. **DYNAMICS AND MODERN GEOMETRY.** A New Chapter in the Theory of Screws. By Sir Robert S. Ball, LL.D. 4to, sewed. 2s.

5. **THE RED STARS.** Observations and Catalogue. New Edition. Edited by Rev. T. Espin, M.A. 4to, sewed. 3s. 6d.

6. **ON THE MORPHOLOGY OF THE DUCK TRIBE AND THE AUK TRIBE.** By W. K. Parker, F.R.S. 9 Plates. 4to, sewed. 3s. 6d.

7. **CONTRIBUTION TO THE SURFACE ANATOMY OF THE CEREBRAL HEMISPHERES.** By D. J. Cunningham, M.D. With a Chapter upon Cranio-Cerebral Topography by Victor Horsley, M.B., F.R.S. 4to, sewed. 8s. 6d.

9. **ON THE FLINDERS PETRIE PAPYRI.** Part II. With 18 Autotypes. 4to, sewed. 42s. net. Appendix to 8 and 9. 5s. net.

10. **THE DECORATIVE ART OF BRITISH NEW GUINEA.** A Study in Papuan Ethnography. By Alfred C. Haddon, M.A. With 12 Plates, and numerous other Illustrations. 4to, sewed. 14s. net.

11. **ON THE FLINDERS PETRIE PAPYRI.** With Transcriptions, Commentaries, and Index. By John P. Mahaffy, D.D., and Prof. J. Gilbert Smyly. With 7 Autotypes. 4to, sewed. 42s. net.

**DITTMAR (Prof. W.). CHEMICAL ARITHMETIC.** Part I. A Collection of Tables, Mathematical, Chemical, and Physical, for the use of Chemists, etc. 8vo, cloth. 6s. net.

— **EXERCISES IN QUANTITATIVE CHEMICAL ANALYSIS,** with a short Treatise on Gas Analysis. 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d.

**DURHAM (H. E., M.A., M.B., F.R.C.S.), and the late WALTER MYERS, M.B. REPORT OF THE YELLOW FEVER EXPEDITION TO PARA (1900).** (Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Memoir VII.) 4to. 7s. 6d.

**DUTTON (J. E., M.B., Ch.B.). REPORT OF THE MALARIA EXPEDITION TO THE GAMBIA.** (Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Memoir X.) 4to. 10s. 6d. net.

**DUTTON (J. E., M.B., Ch.B.), and JOHN L. TODD, B.A., M.D., C.M., M'Gill.** **FIRST REPORT OF THE TRYPAÑOSOMIASIS EXPEDITION TO SENEGAMBIA (1902).** (Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Memoir XI.) 4to. 10s. 6d. net.

**FARADAY and SCHÖENBEIN, LETTERS OF, 1836-1862.** With Notes, Comments, and References to Contemporary Letters. Edited by Georg W. A. Kahlbaum and Francis V. Darbishire, with Portraits of Faraday and Schœnbein in Photogravure. Demy 8vo, cloth. 13s. net.

**FASCICULI MALAYENSES.** Anthropological and Zoological Results of an Expedition to Perak and the Siamese Malay States, 1901-1902, undertaken by Nelson Annandale and Herbert C. Robinson. 4to. Now ready. Anthropology, Part I., 15s. Part IIa., 10s. net. Zoology, Vol. I., Parts I., II., III., and Appendix, 52s. Supplement (Itinerary), 5s.

**GREVILLEA: A Record of Cryptogamic Botany and its Literature.** Edited by M. C. Cooke. Parts. 8vo. Each 1s. 6d. Plates. Vols. I.-XVIII. In 9 vols. Cloth (each 14s.). £6, 6s.

**HARNACK (AXEL). INTRODUCTION TO THE ELEMENTS OF THE DIFFERENTIAL AND INTEGRAL CALCULUS.** From the German. Royal 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d.

**HERBERT (AUBERON) and HAROLD WAGER.** **BAD AIR and BAD HEALTH.** Crown 8vo, sewed, 1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d.

**HOFF (J. H. VAN'T). STUDIES IN CHEMICAL DYNAMICS.** Revised and enlarged by Dr. Ernst Cohen, Assistant in the Chemical Laboratory of the University of Amsterdam. Translated by Thomas Ewan, M.Sc., Ph.D., Demonstrator of Chemistry in the Yorkshire College, Leeds. Royal 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d.

**JAEGER (GUSTAV, M.D.). PROBLEMS OF NATURE.** Selected, edited, and translated by H. G. Schlichter, D.Sc., with a Facsimile of a Letter from Charles Darwin to the Author. Demy 8vo, cloth. 4s.

**JOHNSTONE (J.). BRITISH FISHERIES: Their Administration and their Problems.** A Short Account of the Origin and Growth of British Sea Fishery Authorities and Regulations. 10s. 6d. net.

**JOURNAL OF THE FEDERATED MALAY STATES MUSEUMS.** Issued quarterly. Single numbers, 1s. 6d. net. Subscription, 5s. per annum.

**JOURNAL OF THE LINNEAN SOCIETY. Botany.**At various prices. Index to Journal (Botany), 20s. **Zoology.**

At various prices. General Index to the first 20 vols. of the Journal (Zoology) and the Zoological portion of the Proceedings, 20s.

**JOURNAL OF THE ROYAL MICROSCOPICAL SOCIETY,** containing its Transactions and Proceedings,

with other Microscopical Information. Bi-monthly. Previous to 1893 at various prices; after that date bi-monthly, each 6s. net.

**JOURNAL OF THE QUEKETT MICROSCOPICAL CLUB.** Nos. 1-26, 1s. net.; Nos. 27-31, 2s. 6d. net. 1893,

No. 32, and following Nos., half-yearly, 3s. 6d. net.

**LIVERPOOL MARINE BIOLOGY COMMITTEE. MEMOIRS ON TYPICAL BRITISH MARINE PLANTS AND ANIMALS.** Edited by W. A. Herdman,

D.Sc., F.R.S. All demy 8vo, stiff boards.

1. **ASCIDIA.** By W. A. Herdman. With 5 Plates. Price 2s. net.2. **CARDIUM.** By J. Johnstone, Fisheries Assistant, University College, Liverpool. With 7 Plates. Price 2s. 6d. net.3. **ECHINUS.** By Herbert Clifton Chadwick, Curator of the Port Erin Biological Station. With 5 Plates. Price 2s. net.4. **CODIUM.** By R. J. Harvey Gibson, M.A., F.L.S., Professor of Botany in University College, Liverpool, and Helen P. Auld, B.Sc. With 3 Plates. Price 1s. 6d. net.5. **ALCYONIUM.** By Sydney J. Hickson, M.A., D.Sc., F.R.S., Beyer Professor of Zoology in Owens College, Manchester. With 3 Plates. Price 1s. 6d. net.6. **LEPEOPHTHEIRUS AND LERNEA.** By Andrew Scott, Resident Fisheries Assistant at the Peel Hatchery. With 5 Plates. 2s. net.7. **LINEUS.** By R. C. Punnett, B.A. With 4 Plates. 2s. net.8. **PLEURONECTES.** By Frank J. Cole, Jesus College, Oxford, Lecturer in the Victoria University, Demonstrator of Zoology, University, Liverpool, and James Johnstone, B.Sc. Lond., Fisheries Assistant, University, Liverpool. With 11 Plates. 7s. net.9. **CHONDRUS.** By Otto V. Darbishire, Owens College, Manchester. With 7 Plates. 2s. 6d. net.10. **PATELLA (the Common Limpet).** By J. R. Ainsworth Davis, M.A., Professor of Zoology in the University College of Wales, Aberystwyth, and H. J. Fleure, B.Sc., Fellow of the University of Wales. With 4 Plates. 2s. 6d. net.11. **ARENICOLA (the Lug-Worm).** By J. H. Ashworth, D.Sc., Lecturer in Invertebrate Zoology in the University of Edinburgh. With 8 Plates. Price 4s. 6d. net.12. **GAMMARUS.** By Margaret Cussans, B.Sc., Zoological Department, University of Liverpool. With 4 plates. 2s. net.**LIVERPOOL MARINE BIOLOGY COMMITTEE. FIFTH REPORT UPON THE FAUNA OF LIVERPOOL BAY AND THE NEIGHBOURING SEAS.** Written by the Members of the Liverpool Marine Biology Committee and other Naturalists; and edited by W. A.

Herdman, D.Sc., F.R.S., Professor of Natural History, the University, Liverpool. Demy 8vo, cloth. 12 Plates. 8s. 6d. net.

## MEMOIRS OF THE LIVERPOOL SCHOOL OF TROPICAL MEDICINE—

I. ROSS (R.). **MALARIAL FEVER: Its Cause, Prevention, and Treatment.** 8vo. 2s. 6d.

II. ROSS (R.), H. E. ANNETT, and E. E. AUSTEN. **REPORT OF THE MALARIA EXPEDITION TO SIERRA LEONE (1899).** 4to. 21s.

III. ANNETT (H. E.), J. E. DUTTON, and J. H. ELLIOTT. **REPORT OF THE MALARIA EXPEDITION TO NIGERIA (1900).** I. Malarial Fever. 4to. 10s. 6d.

IV. ANNETT (H. E.), J. E. DUTTON, and J. H. ELLIOTT. **REPORT OF THE MALARIA EXPEDITION TO NIGERIA (1900).** II. Filariasis. 4to. [This is out of print separately, but is also contained in the Report of the Thomson-Yates Laboratories, Vol. IV, Part I. Price 20s.]

V. ROSS (R.) and M. L. TAYLOR. **PROGRESS REPORTS OF THE CAMPAIGN AGAINST MOSQUITOES IN SIERRA LEONE.** Part I. 1901. With a Letter from Dr. Daniels regarding the results arrived at to date. 8vo. 1s. Part II. 1902. 8vo. 1s.

VI. [*Not issued yet.*]

VII. DURHAM (H. E.) and W. MYERS. **REPORT OF THE YELLOW FEVER EXPEDITION TO PARA (1900).** 4to. 7s. 6d.

VIII. TAYLOR (M. L.). **REPORT ON THE SANITARY CONDITIONS OF CAPE COAST TOWN.** 8vo. 1s.

IX. ROSS (R.). **REPORT ON MALARIA AT ISMAILIA AND SUEZ.** 8vo. 1s.

X. DUTTON (J. E.). **REPORT OF THE MALARIA EXPEDITION TO THE GAMBIA.** 4to. 10s. 6d. net.

XI. DUTTON (J. E.) and J. L. TODD. **FIRST REPORT OF THE TRYPANOSOMIASIS EXPEDITION TO SENEGAMBIA (1902).** 4to. 10s. 6d. net. [Also contained in Thompson-Yates Laboratories Reports, V. 2.]

XII. BOYCE (R.). **THE ANTI-MALARIA MEASURES AT ISMAILIA.** 8vo. 1s.

XIII. DUTTON (J. E.) and J. L. TODD. **REPORTS OF THE TRYPANOSOMIASIS EXPEDITION TO THE CONGO (1903-1904).** With a Comparison of the Trypanosomes of Uganda and the Congo Free State by H. W. Thomas, M. D. McGill, and Stanley F. Linton, B.Sc., M.B., Liverpool, and a Note on Tsetse Flies by E. E. Austen, Zoological Department, British Museum. Papers covers. 15s.

**LOCKWOOD (Prof. C. B.). HUNTERIAN LECTURES ON THE DEVELOPMENT AND TRANSITION OF THE TESTIS, NORMAL AND ABNORMAL.** Three 4to Plates. 8vo, cloth. 5s.

**MIERS (J.). ON THE APOCYNACEÆ OF SOUTH AMERICA.** With some preliminary Remarks on the whole family. 35 Plates. 4to, cloth. 30s.

**MOORE (T.). INDEX FILICUM: A Synopsis of the Genera of Ferns.** 20 Parts. 84 Plates. 12mo, sewed. 20s.

**MURRAY (ANDREW). LIST OF COLEOPTERA FROM OLD CALABAR, ON THE WEST COAST OF AFRICA, RECEIVED AND DESCRIBED.** 8vo, sewed. 8s.

**NOTES ON SANITARY CONDITIONS OBTAINING IN PARA.** By the Members of the Yellow Fever Expedition. (Published by the Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine.) 1s.

**PALLIN (Capt. W. A., F.R.C.V.S.). A TREATISE ON EPIZOOTIC LYMPHANGITIS.** Second Edition. Demy 8vo, cloth. 3s. 6d. net; 3s. 9d. post free. Neary 100 pages, 17 full-page Plates.

**PATERSON (ANDREW MELVILLE, M.D., Derby Professor of Anatomy in the University of Liverpool, Hunterian Professor at the Royal College of Surgeons of England). THE HUMAN STERNUM.** Three Lectures delivered at the Royal College of Surgeons, England, November 1903. With 10 Plates. Crown 4to. 10s. net.

**PIDDINGTON (HENRY). THE SAILORS' HORN-BOOK FOR THE LAW OF STORMS.** Being a Practical Exposition of the Theory of the Law of Storms, and its uses to Mariners of all Classes in all Parts of the World. Shown by transparent Storm Cards and useful Lessons. 7th Edition. Demy 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d.

**PRAY (Dr.). ASTIGMATIC LETTERS.** Printed on Millboard, size 22 by 14 inches. 1s.

**PRIOR. ON THE POPULAR NAMES OF BRITISH PLANTS.** Being an Explanation of the Origin and Meaning of the names of our indigenous and most commonly cultivated species. 3rd Edition. Post 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**RANSOM (W. H., M.D., F.R.S., F.R.C.P.). THE INFLAMMATION IDEA IN GENERAL PATHOLOGY.** Demy 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

**RAY (PRAPHULLA CHANDRA, D.Sc., Professor of Chemistry, Presidency College, Calcutta). A HISTORY OF HINDU CHEMISTRY FROM THE EARLIEST TIMES TO THE MIDDLE OF THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY, A.D.** With Sanscrit Texts, Variants, Translation, and Illustrations. Vol. I. Royal 8vo, cloth. 12s. 6d. net. *Out of print.* Vol. II. in preparation.

**REPORTS OF THE THOMPSON-YATES AND JOHNSTON LABORATORIES.** Demy 4to, with Illustrations. Vol. I. 1898-9. 10s. 6d. Vol. II. 1898-9. 25s. Vol. III. Part 1. 1900. 7s. 6d. Vol. III. Part 2. 1901. 12s. 6d. Vol. IV. Part 1. 1901. 20s. Vol. IV. Part 2. 1902. 21s. New Series. Vol. V. Part 1. 1903. Limp, 20s.; cloth, 21s. Vol. V. Part 2. 1903. Limp, 12s. 6d.; cloth, 13s. 6d. Vol. VI. Part 1. 1905. Limp, 12s. 6d.; cloth, 13s. 6d.

**ROSS (RONALD, C.B., F.R.S., etc., Major I.M.S. (retired)). MALARIAL FEVER: Its Cause, Prevention, and Treatment.** (Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Memoir I.) 8vo, cloth. 2s. 6d.

— **H. E. ANNETT, M.D., D.P.H., and E. E. AUSTEN. REPORT OF THE MALARIA EXPEDITION TO SIERRA LEONE (1899).** (Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Memoir II.) 4to. 21s.

— **FIRST PROGRESS REPORT OF THE CAMPAIGN AGAINST MOSQUITOES IN SIERRA LEONE (1901).** With a letter from Dr. Daniels regarding the results arrived at to date. (Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Memoir V., 1.) 1s.

— **SECOND PROGRESS REPORT OF THE CAMPAIGN AGAINST MOSQUITOES IN SIERRA LEONE (1902).** By M. Logan Taylor, M.B. (Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Memoir V., 2.) 1s.

— **REPORT ON MALARIA AT ISMAILIA AND SUEZ.** (Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Memoir IX.) 1s.

**SANDERS (A., M.R.C.S., F.L.S.). RESEARCHES IN THE NERVOUS SYSTEM OF MYXINE GLUTINOSA.** 4to, sewed. 8 Plates. 10s. 6d.

**SANG'S LOGARITHMS.** A new Table of Seven-place Logarithms of all Numbers continuously up to 200,000 2nd Edition. Royal 8vo, cloth. 21s.

**SCHÖENBEIN. CORRESPONDENCE WITH FARADAY.** See Faraday.

— **CORRESPONDENCE WITH BERZELIUS.** See Berzelius.



**SCHREBER (D. G. M.). MEDICAL INDOOR GYM-  
NASTICS**, or a System of Hygienic Exercises for Home Use, to be practised anywhere, without apparatus or assistance, by young and old of either sex, for the preservation of health and general activity. Revised and Supplemented by Rudolf Graefe, M.D. With a large plate and 45 illustrations in the text. Royal 8vo, cloth. 3s. net.

"The exercises described, when efficiently used, will undoubtedly be of value in strengthening and developing the muscular system. The descriptions of the exercises and the figures in the text are excellent."—*Physician and Surgeon*.

"Well worthy of the attention of those who go in for regular physical training as a means for the preservation of health."—*Scotsman*.

"A very sensible little treatise."—*Glasgow Herald*.

**SCHROEN (L.). SEVEN-FIGURE LOGARITHMS  
OF NUMBERS** from 1 to 108,000, and of Sines, Cosines, Tangents, Cotangents to every 10 Seconds of the Quadrant. With a Table of Proportional Parts. By Dr. Ludwig Schroen, Director of the Observatory of Jena, etc., etc. 5th Edition, corrected and stereotyped. With a description of the Tables by A. De Morgan, Professor of Mathematics in University College, London. Imp. 8vo, cloth, printed on light green paper. 9s.

**SNELLEN'S OPHTHALMIC TEST TYPES.** Best Types for the Determination of the Acuteness of Vision. 14th Edition, considerably augmented and improved. 8vo, sewed. 4s. Single Sheets: E T B, M O V, B D E,  $\omega \omega \omega$ , and Large Clock Sheet. 8d. each. Small Clock Sheet and R T V Z. 4d. each.

— **ASTIGMATIC TEST CHART.** Long folio, varnished, mounted on rollers. 2s. net.

**SONNTAG (C. O.). A POCKET FLORA OF EDIN-  
BURGH AND THE SURROUNDING DISTRICT.** A Collection and full Description of all Phanerogamic and the principal Cryptogamic Plants, classified after the Natural System, with an artificial Key and a Glossary of Botanical Terms. By the late C. O. Sonntag, the Royal High School, Edinburgh; formerly Secretary of the Microscopical Society of Glasgow, etc. Fcap. 8vo, limp cloth, round corners, with Map of the Environs of Edinburgh. 3s. 6d. net.

**SPENCER (W. G.). INVENTIONAL GEOMETRY.** With a Preface by Herbert Spencer. 8vo, cloth. 1s.

**SPENCER (W. G.). A SYSTEM OF LUCID SHORT-  
HAND.** With a Prefatory Note by Herbert Spencer. Cloth. 1s.

**STEPHENS (J. W. W., M.D. Cantab., D.P.H.) and S. R. CHRISTOPHERS, M.B. Vict., I.M.S. THE PRACTICAL STUDY OF MALARIA AND OTHER BLOOD PARASITES.** (Published for the Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine). 8vo, cloth. Second Edition, enlarged, with new colour Plates. 12s. 6d. net.

**TAYLOR (M. LOGAN, M.B., Ch.B.). REPORT ON THE SANITARY CONDITIONS OF CAPE COAST TOWN.** (Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Memoir VIII.) 8vo. 1s.

— **REPORT OF THE CAMPAIGN AGAINST THE MOSQUITOES IN SIERRA LEONE.** See Ross and Taylor.

**TRANSACTIONS OF THE EPIDEMIOLOGICAL SOCIETY OF LONDON.** New Series. Vol. XXII. Session 1902-1903. Demy 8vo, cloth. 6s. net. The earlier volumes of the New Series, I.-XXI., are still obtainable. Price 6s. net each. **Commemoration Volume**, containing an account of the Foundation of the Society and of the Commemoration Dinner, together with an Index of the papers read at its meetings between 1855 and 1900. 8vo, cloth. 5s. net.

**TRANSACTIONS OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY OF EDINBURGH.** Vol. XXXVIII. Part 1, 40s. Part 2, 25s. Part 3, 30s. Part 4, 7s. 6d. Vol. XXXIX. Part 1, 30s. Part 2, 19s. Part 3, 43s. Part 4, 9s. Vol. XL. Part 1, 25s. General Index to First Thirty-four Volumes (1783-1888), with History of the Institution. 4to, cloth. 11s.

**TRANSACTIONS OF THE ROYAL IRISH ACADEMY, DUBLIN.** Vols. I.-XX. 4to. £22, 5s. 6d. Vols. XXI.-XXXI. Various prices.

**TRANSACTIONS OF THE ROYAL DUBLIN SOCIETY.** Various volumes at various prices.

**VEGA. LOGARITHMIC TABLES OF NUMBERS AND TRIGONOMETRICAL FUNCTIONS.** Translated from the 40th, or Dr. Bremiker's Edition, thoroughly revised and enlarged, by W. L. F. Fischer, M.A., F.R.S., Fellow of Clare College, Cambridge; Professor of Natural Philosophy in the University of St. Andrews. 75th Stereotyped Edition. Royal 8vo, cloth. 7s.

## VI. Miscellaneous.

ANTHROPOLOGY—SOCIOLOGY—MYTHOLOGY—  
BIBLIOGRAPHY, BIOGRAPHY, ETC.

**AVEBURY** (Lord, D.C.L., F.R.S., etc.) (Sir John Lubbock). **PREHISTORIC TIMES**, as Illustrated by Ancient Remains and the Manners and Customs of Modern Savages. 6th Edition, revised, with 239 Illustrations, a large number of which are specially prepared for this Edition. Demy 8vo, cloth, gilt tops. 18s.

"To anyone who wishes to obtain a succinct conspectus of the present state of knowledge on the subject of early man, we recommend the perusal of this comprehensive volume."—*four. Brit. Archaeolog. Assoc.*

"The fact that this well-known standard work has reached a sixth edition is evidence of its value to ethnologists and archaeologists. The many and beautiful illustrations are most helpful in better understanding the plain but accurate letterpress. Lord Avebury is to be congratulated on the new edition, which is sure to further popularise a fascinating subject for investigation by cultured people."—*Science Gossip.*

"It is necessary to compare the present volume with the fifth edition in order to see how much it has been improved. The illustrations to this sixth edition are immeasurably superior to the fifth."—*Knowledge.*

**BIBLIOGRAPHICAL REGISTER.** Published Quarterly. 6d. net; 2s. 2d. per annum, post free.

**BLACKBURN (HELEN). WOMEN'S SUFFRAGE.** A Record of the Women's Suffrage Movement in the British Isles, with a Biographical Sketch of Miss Becker. Portraits. Crown 8vo, cloth. 6s.

— See also Vynne, Nora, and Blackburn, "Women under the Factory Acts."

**BROWN (ROBERT, Jun., F.S.A.). SEMITIC INFLUENCE IN HELLENIC MYTHOLOGY.** With special reference to the recent mythological works of the Right Hon. Prof. Max Müller and Mr. Andrew Lang. Demy 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

— **RESEARCHES INTO THE ORIGIN OF THE PRIMITIVE CONSTELLATIONS OF THE GREEKS, PHœNICIANS, AND BABYLONIANS.** With a large map of the Northern Hemisphere as viewed at Phœnicia 1200 B.C., and other maps. 2 vols. Demy 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. each.

— **MR. GLADSTONE AS I KNEW HIM**, and other Essays. Demy 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

**CATALOGUE OF THE LONDON LIBRARY**, St James's Square. By C. T. Hagberg Wright, LL.D., etc. xiv + 1626 pp. 4to, cloth. 42s. net. **Supplement I.**, 1902-3. Buckram, 1 vol., 196 pp. 5s. net. **Supplement II.** 198 pp. 1903-4. Buckram. 5s. net.

"The present catalogue is essentially a working catalogue. . . . The general level of accuracy in the printing and editing of the work appears to us to be an unusually high one. . . . We heartily applaud the work, both as a landmark in library land, and as a monument standing upon a firm foundation of its own."—*The Times*.

**CURTIN (JEREMIAH). CREATION MYTHS OF PRIMITIVE AMERICA IN RELATION TO THE RELIGIOUS HISTORY AND MENTAL DEVELOPMENT OF MANKIND.** Contains twenty long myths taken down word for word by Mr. Curtin from Indians who knew no religion or language but their own, and many of whom had not seen a white man until they had attained years of maturity. With an elaborate Introduction and Notes. Demy 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. net.

**ENGELHARDT (C.). DENMARK IN THE EARLY IRON AGE.** Illustrated by recent Discoveries in the Peat-Mosses of Slesvig. 33 Plates (giving representations of upwards of a thousand objects), Maps, and numerous other Illustrations on wood. 1866. 4to, cloth. 31s. 6d.

**ENGLISHWOMAN'S REVIEW (THE) OF SOCIAL AND INDUSTRIAL QUESTIONS.** Edited by Antoinette M. Mackenzie. Issued quarterly, sewed. 1s.

**FARNELL (L. R., D.Litt.). EVOLUTION OF RELIGION.** See Crown Theological Library, Vol. XII., p. 13.

**GOLDAMMER (H.). THE KINDERGARTEN.** A Guide to Fröbel's Method of Education. 2 vols. in 1. 120 pp. of Illustrations. 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d.

**HARRISON (A., D.Sc.). WOMEN'S INDUSTRIES IN LIVERPOOL.** An Inquiry into the Economic Effects of Legislation regulating the Labour of Women. 8vo. 3s.

**HENRY (JAMES). ÆNEIDEA; or, Critical, Exegetical and Æsthetical Remarks on the Æneis.** With a personal collation of all the first-class MSS., and upwards of 100 second-class MSS., and all the principal editions. Vol. I. (3 Parts), Vol. II. (3 Parts), Vol. III. (3 Parts), Vol. IV. (1 Part). Royal 8vo, sewed. £2, 2s. net.

**HERBERT (Hon. A.). THE SACRIFICE OF EDUCATION TO EXAMINATION.** Letters from "All Sorts and Conditions of Men." Edited by Auberon Herbert. Half-cloth boards. 2s.

**HERBERT (Hon. A.). WINDFALL AND WATER-DRIFT.** Verse Miniatures. Square 12mo, cloth limp, gilt tops. 2s.

— **and WAGER (HAROLD). BAD AIR AND BAD HEALTH.** Dedicated to Professor Clifford Allbutt. Reprinted from the "Contemporary Review." 8vo, cloth, 1s. 6d.; sewed, 1s.

**JOHNSON (E.). THE RISE OF ENGLISH CULTURE.** With a brief account of the Author's life and writings. Demy 8vo, cloth. 15s. net.

**KIEPERT'S NEW ATLAS ANTIQUUS.** Twelve Maps of the Ancient World, for Schools and Colleges. Third hundred thousand. 12th Edition, with a complete Geographical Index. Folio, boards. 6s. Strongly bound in cloth. 7s. 6d.

— **WALL-MAPS OF THE ANCIENT WORLD—**

**WALL-MAP OF ANCIENT ITALY.** Italia antiqua. For the study of Livy, Sallust, Cicero, Dionysius, etc. Scale 1 : 800,000. Mounted on rollers, varnished. 20s.

**GENERAL WALL-MAP OF THE OLD WORLD.** Tabula orbis terrarum antiqui ad illustrandam potissimum antiquissimi ævi usque ad Alexandrum M. historiam. For the study of ancient history, especially the history of the Oriental peoples: the Indians, Medes, Persians, Babylonians, Assyrians, Egyptians, Phœnicians, etc. Scale 1 : 5,400,000. Mounted on rollers, varnished. 20s.

**GENERAL WALL-MAP OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE.** Imperii Romani tabula geographica. For the study of the development of the Roman Empire. Scale 1 : 300,000. Mounted on rollers, varnished. 24s.

**WALL-MAP OF ANCIENT LATIUM.** Latii Veteris et finitimarum regionum tabula. For the study of Livy, Dionysius, etc. Scale 1 : 125,000. With supplement: Environs of Rome. Scale 1 : 25,000. Mounted on rollers, varnished. 18s.

**WALL-MAP OF ANCIENT GREECE.** Græciæ Antiquæ tabula. For the study of Herodotus, Thucydides, Xenophon, Strabo, Cornelius Nepos, etc. Scale 1 : 500,000. Mounted on rollers, varnished. 24s.

**WALL-MAP OF THE EMPIRES OF THE PERSIANS AND OF ALEXANDER THE GREAT.** Imperia Persarum et Macedonum. For the study of Herodotus, Xenophon, Justinian, Arian, Curtius. Scale 1 : 300,000. Mounted on rollers and varnished. 20s.

**WALL-MAP OF GAUL, WITH PORTIONS OF ANCIENT BRITAIN AND ANCIENT GERMANY.** Galliæ Cisalpinæ et Transalpinæ cum partibus Britannicæ et Germanicæ tabula. For the study of Cæsar, Justinian, Livy, Tacitus, etc. Scale 1 : 1,000,000. Mounted on rollers and varnished. 24s.

**KIEPERT'S WALL-MAPS OF THE ANCIENT WORLD—Contd.**

**WALL-MAP OF ANCIENT ASIA MINOR.** *Asie Minoris Antiquæ tabula.* For the study of Herodotus, Xenophon, Justinian, Arian, Curtius etc. Scale 1 : 800,000. Mounted on rollers and varnished. 20s.

**LAING and HUXLEY. PREHISTORIC REMAINS OF CAITHNESS.** By Samuel Laing, Esq., with Notes on the Human Remains by Th. H. Huxley, F.R.S. 150 Engravings. 8vo, cloth. 4s. 6d.

**MARCKS (ERICH, Professor of Modern History at the University of Leipzig). ENGLAND AND GERMANY: Their Relations in the Great Crises of European History, 1500-1900.** Demy 8vo, stiff wrapper. 1s.

**OTIA MERSEIANA.** The Publication of the Arts Faculty of the University of Liverpool, Vols. I.-III. 8vo. 1899-1903. Each 10s. 6d.

**PEDDIE (R. A.). PRINTING AT BRESCIA IN THE FIFTEENTH CENTURY.** A List of the Issues. 5s. net.

**ST. CLAIR (GEORGE, Author of "Creation Records," "Buried Cities and Bible Countries," etc.). MYTHS OF GREECE EXPLAINED AND DATED.** An Embalmed History from Uranus to Perseus, including the Eleusinian Mysteries and the Olympic Games. Demy 8vo. 2 vols. 16s.

**SCHLOSS (DAVID F.). METHODS OF INDUSTRIAL REMUNERATION.** 3rd Edition, revised and enlarged. Crown 8vo, cloth. 7s. 6d.

"In its new as in its old form the book is well nigh indispensable to the student who desires to get some insight into the actual facts about the various methods of industrial remuneration, and the degree of success with which they have been applied in the various trades."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"More useful than ever to the students of the labour problem."—*Political Science Quarterly*.

**SPENCER (HERBERT). AN AUTOBIOGRAPHY.**

*See p. 31.*

— **PRINCIPLES OF SOCIOLOGY.** *See p. 31.*

— **STUDY OF SOCIOLOGY.** *See p. 32.*

— **DESCRIPTIVE SOCIOLOGY.** *See p. 32.*

**STEPHENS (GEORGE). PROFESSOR BUGGE'S STUDIES ON NORTHERN MYTHOLOGY EXAMINED.** Illustrations. 8vo, cloth. 8s.

— **THE RUNES, WHENCE CAME THEY?** 4to, sewed. 6s.

— **OLD NORTHERN RUNIC MONUMENTS.** Vol. IV. Folio. 20s. net.

**VEILED FIGURE (THE), and Other Poems.** Large post 8vo, buckram, gilt, cover designed by Mr. T. Blake Wigram. 2s. 6d.

**VYNNE (NORA) and HELEN BLACKBURN, and with the Assistance of H. W. ALLASON. WOMEN UNDER THE FACTORY ACTS.** Part 1. Position of the Employer. Part 2. Position of the Employed. Crown 8vo, cloth. 1s. net.

**WELD (A. G.). GLIMPSES OF TENNYSON AND OF SOME OF HIS FRIENDS.** With an Appendix by the late Bertram Tennyson. Illustrated with Portraits in photogravure and colour, and with a facsimile of a MS. poem. Fcap. 8vo, art linen. 4s. 6d. net.

"This is a delightful little book, written by one who has all the qualifications for the task—the opportunities of observation, the interest of relationship, and the sympathetic and appreciative temper. . . . We do not attempt to criticise, but only to give such a description as will send our readers to it."—*Spectator*.

"Everyone who reads the book will understand Tennyson a little better, and many will view him in a new aspect for the first time."—*Daily Chronicle*.

"It is quite worthy of a place side by side with the larger 'Life.'"—*Glasgow Herald*.

---

**LIST OF PERIODICALS, REVIEWS, AND  
TRANSACTIONS AND PROCEEDINGS  
OF LEARNED SOCIETIES**

PUBLISHED BY WILLIAMS & NORGATE.

**THE HIBBERT JOURNAL: A Quarterly Review of Religion, Theology, and Philosophy.** Single numbers, 2s. 6d. net. Subscription, 10s. per annum, post free.

"There is, for English readers at least, no existing medium for expression of free thought in this best sense; and should anything but success await the venture of publishing 'The Hibbert Journal,' we shall confess painful surprise. . . . It will be a reflection on our theological and philosophical students if they do not show full appreciation of a journal so admirably planned and so strongly commenced. . . . For the form of the journal we have nothing but praise, the print being large and the margins ample. We have never with more sincerity wished well to a new undertaking; and should it fulfil its undoubted possibilities, 'The Hibbert Journal' must be of immense service to all serious and progressive students of the subjects with which it deals."—*Christian World*.

**MIND: A Quarterly Review of Psychology and Philosophy.** Edited by Dr. G. F. Stout. Published in the first week of January, April, July, and October. 4s. Per annum, 12s., post free.

**THE LIBERAL CHURCHMAN. A Quarterly Review.** Subscription, 4s. per annum, post free. Single numbers, 1s. net, 1s. 2d. post free.

**THE ENGLISHWOMAN'S REVIEW OF SOCIAL AND INDUSTRIAL QUESTIONS.** Edited by Antoinette M. Mackenzie. Issued quarterly on 15th January, April, July, and October. Price 1s. Per annum, 4s. 6d., post free.

**JOURNAL OF THE FEDERATED MALAY STATES MUSEUMS.** Issued quarterly. Single numbers, 1s. 6d. net. Subscription, 5s. per annum.

**JOURNAL OF THE ROYAL MICROSCOPICAL SOCIETY,** containing its Transactions and Proceedings, with other Microscopical Information. Bi-monthly. 6s. net. Yearly subscriptions, 37s. 6d., post free.



## LIST OF PERIODICALS, Etc.—Continued.

**JOURNAL OF THE QUEKETT MICROSCOPICAL CLUB.** Issued half-yearly, April and November. Price 3s. 6d. net. 7s. 6d. per annum, post free.

**LINNEAN SOCIETY OF LONDON.** Journal of Botany and Journal of Zoology. Published irregularly at various prices.

**ROYAL SOCIETY OF EDINBURGH.** Transactions. Issued irregularly at various prices.

**LIVERPOOL MARINE BIOLOGY COMMITTEE.** Memoirs. I.—XI. already published at various prices. Fauna of Liverpool Bay. Fifth Report, written by Members of the Committee and other Naturalists. Cloth. 8s. 6d. net. See p. 50.

**MEMOIRS OF THE LIVERPOOL SCHOOL OF TROPICAL MEDICINE.** See p. 51.

**ROYAL ASTRONOMICAL SOCIETY.** Memoirs and Monthly Notices. Yearly volumes at various prices.

**ROYAL IRISH ACADEMY.** Transactions and Proceedings issued irregularly; prices vary. Cunningham Memoirs. Vols. I.—X. already issued at various prices.

**ROYAL DUBLIN SOCIETY.** Transactions and Proceedings. Issued irregularly at various prices. 15s

**REPORTS OF THE THOMPSON-YATES LABORATORIES.** See p. 53.

**TRANSACTIONS OF THE EPIDEMIOLOGICAL SOCIETY OF LONDON.** See p. 55.





